

**Macmillan's Annotated Classics**

**ADDISON :**

**Coverley Papers**  
**From**  
**THE SPECTATOR**

Edited by  
**K.DEIGHTON**



MACMILLAN

MACMILLAN'S ANNOTATED CLASSICS

JOSEPH ADDISON

COVERLEY PAPERS FROM  
THE SPECTATOR



JOSEPH ADDISON

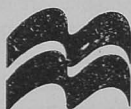
Coverley Papers

from

THE SPECTATOR

*Edited by*

K. Deighton



MACMILLAN



274657  
0111:2  
P53



This book is copyright in all countries which are signatories to the Berne Convention

*First Edition 1896*

*Reprinted 1897 – 1927 (Seventeen times), Reset 1930*

*Reprinted 1933 – 1965 (Eight times)*

*Reprinted in India 1969 – 1991 (Eight times), 2005*

## **MACMILLAN INDIA LIMITED**

Chennai Jaipur Mumbai Patna Bangalore  
Bhopal Kolkata Chandigarh Coimbatore  
Cuttack Guwahati Hubli Hyderabad Lucknow  
Madurai Nagpur New Delhi Pune Siliguri  
Trivandrum Visakhapatnam  
Associated Companies throughout the world

**SBN 0333 91748 0**

Published by RAJIV BERI for Macmillan India Limited and  
Printed by S.M. YOGAN at Macmillan India Press, Chennai -600041

“ This book is meant for educational and learning purposes. The author(s) of the book has/have taken all reasonable care to ensure that the contents of the book do not violate any existing copyright or other intellectual property rights of any person in any manner whatsoever. In the event the author(s) has/have been unable to track any source and if any copyright has been inadvertently infringed, please notify the publisher in writing for corrective action.”

# CONTENTS.

|                                                          | PAGE |
|----------------------------------------------------------|------|
| INTRODUCTION, - - - - -                                  | vi   |
| COVERLEY PAPERS FROM THE SPECTATOR—                      |      |
| I. The Spectator's Account of Himself, - - - - -         | 1    |
| II. Of the Club, - - - - -                               | 5    |
| III. Sir Roger at Home, - - - - -                        | 11   |
| IV. The Coverley Household, - - - - -                    | 15   |
| V. Character of Will Wimble, - - - - -                   | 18   |
| VI. Sir Roger's Ancestors, - - - - -                     | 22   |
| VII. On Ghosts and Apparitions, - - - - -                | 26   |
| VIII. Sir Roger at Church, - - - - -                     | 29   |
| IX. His Account of his Disappointment in Love, - - - - - | 32   |
| X. On the Shame and Fear of Poverty, - - - - -           | 37   |
| XI. Labour and Exercise, - - - - -                       | 41   |
| XII. A Hunting Scene with Sir Roger, - - - - -           | 45   |
| XIII. On Witchcraft—Story of Moll White, - - - - -       | 50   |
| XIV. Sir Roger's Reflections on the Widow, - - - - -     | 54   |
| XV. Rural Manners, - - - - -                             | 58   |
| XVI. Instinct in Animals, - - - - -                      | 61   |
| XVII. Instinct in Animals— <i>Continued</i> , - - - - -  | 65   |
| XVIII. Sir Roger at the Assizes, - - - - -               | 70   |

|                                                          | PAGE |
|----------------------------------------------------------|------|
| XIX. Education of Country Squires, - - -                 | 74   |
| XX. Mischiefs of Party Spirit, - - -                     | 79   |
| XXI. Mischiefs of Party Spirit— <i>Continued</i> , - - - | 83   |
| XXII. Sir Roger and the Gipsies, - - -                   | 87   |
| XXIII. The Country's Opinion of the Spectator, - - -     | 91   |
| XXIV. A Scene in a Stage Coach, - - -                    | 94   |
| XXV. Sir Roger in Town, - - -                            | 98   |
| XXVI. Visit to Westminster Abbey, - - -                  | 102  |
| XXVII. Sir Roger at the Theatre, - - -                   | 106  |
| XXVIII. Will Honeycomb's Amours, - - -                   | 110  |
| XXIX. Visit to Spring Gardens, - - -                     | 113  |
| XXX. Death of Sir Roger, - - -                           | 116  |
| NOTES, - - -                                             | 120  |
| INDEX, - - -                                             | 190  |

## INTRODUCTION.

ADDISON's life extends over a period of forty-seven years only, from 1672 to 1719. At his birth, Charles the Second was still on the throne; when he died, George the First had been reigning for five years. The interval had witnessed scenes as important as almost any in English history, and the change of thought, of social manners, of political and religious principles, was marked and permanent. With this change was a change in the tone of literature, to bring which about no one contributed more largely than Addison, no one with a spirit so entirely healthy. From the point of view of practical action, Addison's life was uneventful. Though a politician, for many years a Member of Parliament, Under Secretary for Ireland, Chief Secretary for Ireland, and finally Secretary of State, he never distinguished himself as a brilliant administrator, while as a speaker he was a complete failure. The life he loved was that of a student, not so much of books as of mankind; and this life embellished by literature and poetry, and accompanied by the honour and respect of all whose honour and respect were worth having, he enjoyed almost without interruption. From the peaceful society of his

Brief Sket  
of Addison  
Life.

well-loved Latin poets during a sojourn of ten years at Oxford, he passed into the larger sphere of the busy world. A poetical address to Dryden on the subject of his translations from the classical poets brought him to the laureate's notice. By him, as it is supposed, the young poet was made known to Congreve, who in his turn, as stated by Steele, introduced him to Montague, then Chancellor of the Exchequer. Montague, himself a man of letters, if not of great literary skill, was struck with Addison's verses, Latin and English; and feeling that the grace of so facile and polished a writer would be valuable in political affairs determined to employ him in the diplomatic service. With this object he procured for Addison a pension of £300 a year to enable him to travel and so acquire that knowledge of foreign languages which was indispensable for a diplomatic career. Furnished with this help, and retaining the fellowship he had won at Oxford, Addison set out for France in 1699, and for nearly a year studied the French language at Blois. Having mastered his task, he repaired, in 1700, to Paris, where he remained till December, mixing with distinguished men of letters, and meeting, among others, the philosopher Malebranche and the critic Boileau. From France he passed on to Italy, and afterwards visited Switzerland, Austria, and Holland, returning to England in the autumn of 1703. Some time before his return, his patron, Montague, now Lord Halifax, had lost office on the accession of Queen Anne, with the consequence to Addison that all his hopes of a diplomatic career came to an end, and his pension was stopped. For more than a year he remained without employment. But "bountiful Fortune," his



dear lady," was never long from his side. In 1704, the more moderate Tories found it prudent to treat the Whigs with a consideration that in their first elevation to power they had not shown; and Lord Treasurer Godolphin, at his wits' ends to find a poet who would fittingly commemorate the great victory of Blenheim, was glad to conciliate Halifax by accepting his advice that Addison's help should be sought. Addison complied with the request made to him in very flattering terms, and in a short time produced *The Campaign*. Its success was great and general. As an immediate reward, a Commissionership worth about two hundred pounds a year was bestowed upon the poet; and early in 1706, on the recommendation of Godolphin, his services were further acknowledged by his being made Under Secretary of State. Meanwhile, besides giving considerable help to Steele in his drama of the *Tender Husband*, Addison had published a narrative of his travels in Italy, and brought out an opera entitled *Rosamond*, which seems to have failed owing to its being poorly set to music. In 1708 Addison's connection with politics became more definite. He was elected to the House of Commons, first for the borough of Lostwithiel and afterwards for Malmesbury, and in 1709 became Chief Secretary for Ireland, sitting in the Irish parliament as member for Cavan. It was while in Ireland that Addison, through the publication of the *Tatler*, was brought into that close literary connection with its editor, Steele, that ultimately led to the birth of the *Spectator*. For a while his papers in the *Tatler* were few and far between, official duties occupying most of his time. But during the winter of 1709 and the latter part of the

following year, both periods being spent in London, his contributions became frequent, and in the end so completely overshadowed those by all others that Steele, in his preface to the final volume, speaks of himself as faring "like a distressed prince who calls in a powerful neighbour to his aid. I was undone by my auxiliary; when I had once called him in, I could not subsist without him." The *Tatler* ceased to appear at the end of 1711, and two months later the *Spectator* took its place. The details of its history will be found further on; but it may here be said that it was a complete success, and pecuniarily most profitable. To Addison this later fact was of importance. For in 1710 the Ministry had fallen, and with its fall went Addison's secretaryship, as well as a Keepership of Records which brought him in between three and four hundred a year. He had, however, enough to live on with comfort, and probably no part of his life was happier than that in which he created and sustained the *Spectator*. In 1713 he produced his well-known tragedy, *Cato*, the first four acts of which he is said to have had by him since his return from Italy. Though a "passionless and mechanical play," as it has been justly styled, *Cato* had at the time a marvellous success—success in a great measure due to the popularity of its author, and to a determination of both the great political parties to see in its sentiments an endorsement of their own principles. *Cato* was followed by more essays in the *Guardian*, a paper edited by Steele after the *Spectator* had ceased. These however, were few in number; and with a prose comedy called the *Drummer*, Addison's purely literary career came to an end, though in 1715 and 1716 he published fifty-five numbers of the *Free*

*holder*, a political paper written in defence of orthodox Whig principles. On the accession of George the First in 1714, Addison again became Chief Secretary for Ireland, a post which in the following year he resigned for a seat at the Board of Trade. In 1716 he married the Countess of Warwick, and a year later became Secretary of State. His breaking health, however, obliged him to abandon office after a tenure of eleven months only, and in his retirement he again began to use his pen. He was anxious to complete a work on the evidences of the Christian religion, already begun; but from this he was diverted by a controversy with Steele on the subject of a Peerage Bill introduced by Sunderland, and so great was the acrimony imported into the discussion that his last days were embittered by the complete rupture of a life-long friendship. For his end was now near at hand. Asthma, from which he had long suffered, was followed by dropsy, and on the 17th of July, 1719, he died at Holland House. His body, after lying in state in the Jerusalem Chamber, was buried in Westminster Abbey, where, though not until 1809, a statue by Westmacott was erected to his memory in the south transept, near to the "Poets' Corner." "It represents him," says Macaulay, "as we can conceive him, clad in his dressing-gown, and freed from his wig, stepping from his parlour at Chelsea into his trim little garden, with the account of the Everlasting Club, or the Loves of Hilpa and Shalum, just finished for the next day's *Spectator*, in his hand. Such a mark of national respect was due to the unsullied statesman, to the accomplished scholar, to the master of pure English eloquence, to the consummate painter of life and manners. It was due, above all, to

the great satirist, who alone knew how to use ridicule without abusing it, who, without inflicting a wound, effected a great social reform, and who reconciled wit and virtue, after a long and disastrous separation, during which wit had been led astray by profligacy, and virtue by fanaticism."

Besides the works already mentioned, Addison was the author of several Latin poems and translations from Latin poets, of a Discourse on Ancient and Modern Learning, a poetical epistle to Halifax, contributions to the *Whig Examiner*, Dialogues on Medals, and some minor pieces.

*Spectator*. Previous to the publication of *The Tatler*, the immediate forerunner of *The Spectator*, journalism in England had been of the most meagre and untrustworthy character. In its earliest days it confined itself chiefly to the publication of news from abroad, home news of a political nature being forbidden. By the abolition of the Star Chamber in 1641, a loose was given to the expression of political opinion, and various journals, representative of the royalist and the republican causes, sprang into existence; but this freedom of speech was quickly checked by a Licensing Act, passed in 1647, which virtually gave the Government complete control over the press. Shortly after the expiry of this Act, in 1679, a fresh start was made, and among the variety of papers put into circulation were the *London Gazette* and the *Observer*. Somewhat later, about 1710, appeared the *Examiner*, a Tory paper of which Swift was the mainstay, and the *Whig Examiner*, largely controlled by Addison. Besides these political organs were others of a more general character. "Men of

active and curious minds, with a little leisure and a large love of discussion, loungers at Will's or at the Grecian Coffee-Houses, were anxious to have their doubts on all subjects resolved by a printed oracle. Their tastes were gratified by the ingenuity of John Dunton, whose strange account of his *Life and Errors* throws a strong light on the literary history of this period. In 1690 Dunton published his *Athenian Gazette*, the name of which he afterwards altered to the *Athenian Mercury*. The object of this paper was to answer questions put to the editor by the public. These were of all kinds on religion, casuistry, love, literature, and manners, no question being too subtle or absurd to extract a reply from the conductor of the paper. The *Athenian Mercury* seems to have been read by as many distinguished men of the period as *Notes and Queries* in our own time, and there can be no doubt that the quaint humours it originated gave the first hint to the inventors of *The Tatler* and *The Spectator*.<sup>1</sup> *The Tatler*, originally publishing advertisements and news as well as papers of criticism, anecdote, original poetry, etc., gradually developed into a series of essays on books, morals, and manners; and *The Spectator*, brought out three months after *The Tatler's* disappearance, followed closely its later shape. The plan of *The Spectator* is undoubtedly Addison's, and the portrait of its guiding spirit drawn by him in the first Number is in a measure a portrait of the painter. The club to which he belongs is described by Steele in the next Number. "Four of the club," says Macaulay,<sup>2</sup> "the templar, the clergyman, the soldier,

<sup>1</sup>Courthope, *Addison, English Men of Letters Series*, pp. 87, 8.

<sup>2</sup>*Essay on Addison*.

and the merchant, were uninteresting figures, fit only for a background. But the other two, an old country baronet and an old town rake, though not delineated with a very delicate pencil, had some good strokes. Addison took the rude outlines into his own hands, retouched them, coloured them, and is in truth the creator of the Sir Roger de Coverley and the Will Honeycomb with whom we are all familiar."<sup>1</sup> The characters thus grouped "represent considerable classes or sections of the community, and are, as a rule, men of strongly marked opinions, prejudices, and foibles, which furnish inexhaustible matter of comment to the Spectator himself, who delivers the judgments of reason and common-sense. Sir Roger de Coverley, with his simplicity, his high sense of honour, and his old-world reminiscences, reflects the country gentleman of the best kind; Sir Andrew Freeport expresses the opinions of the enterprising, hard-headed, and rather hard-hearted monied interest; Captain Sentry speaks for the army; the Templar for the world of taste and learning; the Clergyman for theology and philosophy; while Will Honeycomb, the elderly man of fashion, gives the Spectator many opportunities for criticizing the traditions of morality and breeding surviving from the

<sup>1</sup>Courthope, p. 174, describes these words as "a very mis-leading account of the matter," since it seems to suggest that Sir Roger was "merely the stray phantom of Steele's imagination," whereas it "was from the first intended to be a *type* of a country gentleman," and was "so truly conceived as to lend itself easily to the treatment of writers who approached it with various conceptions and very unequal degrees of skill"; those writers being Addison, Steele, Budgell, and Tickell.

day of the Restoration.”<sup>1</sup> The success of *The Spectator* was immediate and permanent. “The number of copies daily distributed was at first three thousand. It subsequently increased, and had risen to near four thousand when the stamp tax was imposed. That tax was fatal to a crowd of journals. The *Spectator*, however, stood its ground, doubled its price, and, though its circulation fell off, still yielded a large revenue to the state and to the authors. For particular papers the demand was immense; of some, it is said, twenty thousand copies were required. But this was not all. To have the *Spectator* served up every morning with the bohea and rolls was a luxury for the few. The majority were content to wait till essays enough had appeared to form a volume. Ten thousand copies of each volume were immediately taken off, and new editions were called for. It must be remembered, that the population of England was then hardly a third of what it now is. The number of Englishmen who were in the habit of reading, was probably not a sixth of what it now is. A shopkeeper or a farmer who found any pleasure in literature, was a rarity. Nay, there was doubtless more than one knight of the shire whose country seat did not contain ten books, receipt books and books on farriery included. In these circumstances, the sale of the *Spectator* must be considered as indicating a popularity quite as great as that of the most successful works of Sir Walter Scott and Mr. Dickens in our own time”<sup>2</sup> Addison’s share in the work was nearly one half of the whole, his papers being 274 as against 236 contributed

<sup>1</sup>Courthope, *Addison*, pp. 106, 7.

<sup>2</sup>Macaulay, *Essay on Addison*.



by Steele, the remainder being made up by various writers, such as Hughes, Budgell, Tickle, Phillips, etc. But the mere number of papers due to Addison is a wholly inadequate measure of their importance. They are not only incomparably superior to all the rest, but the very life and soul of the undertaking. They give to *The Spectator* the tone which runs through it from first to last. They prescribe the area over which discussion shall range. Rigorously excepting everything of a party nature, Addison addresses himself to humanity as a whole. Nothing is too trivial for him, if so be that the men and women of his time may find a healthy interest in it; if under the mask of humour, banter, and irony he may expose the littleness of ambitions, the follies of fashion, the empty beliefs of a vacant mind; if the foibles and eccentricities whether of town or country life can be pressed into the service of a warm-hearted, uncensorious philosophy. Allegory and apologue, fable and anecdote, are as much the weapons of his warfare against evil as the more studied exercises of serious argument and lofty morality, and their efficacy without doubt much greater. It was his endeavour, he tells us, "to enliven morality with wit, and to temper wit with morality," his ambition to have it said of him that he had "brought Philosophy out of closets and libraries, schools and colleges, to dwell in clubs and assemblies, at tea-tables and coffee-houses," his belief that it was better "to amuse ourselves with such writings as tend to the wearing out of ignorance, passion, and prejudice than such as naturally conduce to inflame hatreds, and make enmities irreconcilable." The catholicity of his spirit as regards the public whom he addressed has frequently



been pointed out. Swift, indeed, sneered at him for the prominence he gave to feminine affairs and the importance he attached to enlisting the interest of women. But Addison knew his times. He knew, what is still better, how largely the purity and the dignity of social life depend upon the place which women hold in that life, how great the influence their cultivation has upon the general cultivation, how varied the power which for good or evil they wield in the education of their children; while at the same time he had the good sense to recognize and the chivalry to avow, as had never before been recognized and avowed, the claims they can put forth to an equality of enjoyment of all that is elevated and noble in literature. If the tone of men's society was to be raised, as Addison hoped to raise it, policy no less than justice demanded a change in the relations of the sexes, demanded that what was pure should also be enlightened, what was naturally refined and tender should be fitted to communicate that refinement and tenderness. Hence no one will nowadays regret the share of *The Spectator* which falls to womanly pursuits and concerns. Nor merely from the point of interest and enjoyment will there be any wish that that share had been less. For in none of the series is Addison's play of fancy more delicate, in none his grace and pathos more graceful and pathetic. Party Patches and Ladies' Head-dresses may in themselves seem trifles too airy for robust consideration, the Dissection of a Coquette's Heart and the doubts and hesitations that perplexed Hilpa's choice, texts all too slight for the stern moralist; yet none but a temperament sullen and moody as Swift's would endure to lose the bright imagery with which

they are lighted up, the geniality and picturesque setting that Addison's touch alone could bestow. All these characteristics in more or less prodigality are to be seen throughout his papers. But of the various gifts that fitted him for his self-imposed task, the most perfect was his sense of humour, humour that while free from all bitterness was yet exquisitely penetrative,—a humour, like Jaques's melancholy, "compounded of many simples, extracted from many objects." Amiable and urbane, laughing at his fellow-men but laughing with no scorn,—rather as one who understands and sympathizes,—with gentle pressure he puts his finger on their foibles, and cajoles as much as argues them out of their propensities. Popular superstitions, personal whims, caprices, idiosyncrasies, social manners, pursuits, fashions, in their turn find themselves within his hold, to be examined, dandled, caressed, rebuked, sentenced. Irony, all-delicious in its gravity, forms a large, perhaps the largest, constituent of his humour; pathos of the truest ring is seldom far off. Argument is pointed by analogy and a sprightly cheerfulness quickens what is serious. Pervading everything we have an imaginative faculty such as belongs to the poet mind alone, an appreciation of the ludicrous that must have demanded constant self-restraint, a delicacy of feeling that made coarseness as impossible to his use as it was painful to his own sensitive organization, an absolute purity of object, a far-seeing philanthropy, a serene dignity of soul and conduct. As regards Addison's style, of no one could it be more truly said that the style is the man. He has a manner, but no mannerisms. That manner many have striven to make their own, but have striven in vain.

For behind it stand the loving nature to which everything human is the object of affectionate concern, the placid temper that no passion could ruffle, a life unsullied by excess, a deep yet simple piety, powers of observation ever on the watch, the discipline of travel, an inherited love of letters to which the study of his country's masterpieces and the models of classical refinement had given precision, freedom, grace of movement, aptness of illustration, sobriety of tone, unerring sense of proportion. Johnson may justly say that "whoever wishes to attain an English style, familiar but not coarse, and elegant but not ostentatious, must give his days and nights to the volumes of Addison." He must do so, however, with a contented foreknowledge that as easily may he imprison "the viewless winds" as catch the airy grace with which Mr. Spectator bears himself along.

## STEELE.

The following outline of Steele's career, abridged, from Professor Minto's article in the *Encyclopedia Britannica*, will probably suffice for the student. Born in Dublin in 1672, Richard Steele entered the Charterhouse in 1684, and there first met Addison, his junior in age by a few weeks only. Five years later he proceeded to Merton College, Oxford, Addison being at the time an undergraduate of Magdalen. But the want of steadiness which followed him through life manifested itself even in these early days, and he left the university without taking his degree. His next step was to enter the army as a volunteer, serving for a time under the

Duke of Ormonde. A poem on the funeral of Mary (1695), dedicated to Lord Cutts, colonel of the Coldstream Guards, brought him under the notice of that officer, who gave him a commission in his own regiment, and later procured for him a company in Lord Lucas's fusiliers. A prose treatise, *The Christian Hero*, 1701, procured him the favour of William, though the king died before anything had been done for its author. His next literary effort, a comedy entitled *The Funeral*, 1701, was well received on the stage, and was shortly followed by two other comedies, *The Lying Lover*, 1703, and *The Tender Husband*, 1705; the former, according to Steele himself, being "damned for its piety," the latter meeting with more success. But the best of his comedies, *The Conscious Lovers*, did not appear till 1722. In 1707 Steele was appointed to the office of Gazeteer, and his work as editor of the Gazette led to the *Tatler*, and this in its turn to the *Spectator*. The *Spectator* was followed by the *Guardian*, to which also Addison contributed. Other periodicals set on foot by Steele were the *Englishman*, 1714, an assailant of the policy of the Tory ministry; the *Lover*, more general in its aims; the *Reader*, an opposition journal to the Tory *Examiner*; *Town-Talk*, the *Tea Table*, *Chit-Chat*, and the most famous of his political papers, the *Plebeian*, in which he carried on a vigorous controversy with Addison over Sunderland's Peerage Bill. His last venture in journalism was the *Theatre*, 1719-1720; but besides these papers, he was the author of numerous pamphlets on a variety of subjects. A zealous Whig, his fortunes varied with those of his party, and his enthusiasm often brought him into trouble. Thus, on the question of

the fortifications of Dunkirk in 1713, he threw up a pension and a commissionership of stamps in order to go into parliament and attack the ministry. The language of his pamphlet on the *Crisis* was stigmatized as seditious and he was in consequence expelled the House. His expulsion brought forth *An Apology for himself and his Writings* which contains many biographical details of importance. On the accession of the house of Hanover, Steele received various lucrative appointments, yet these notwithstanding he could never free himself from his financial difficulties, but was compelled in 1724 to retire from London and live in the country. His last years were spent on his wife's estate of Llangunnor in Wales, where, after a paralytic seizure which broke down his health, he died 1st September, 1729. As a man, Steele was impulsive, frequent in extremes, careless of the proprieties, but generous, affectionate, full of worthy enthusiasms, modest in his estimate of himself, ever ready to acknowledge superior merit, and charitable towards the faults and follies at which he laughed. As a writer, he is remarkable for his versatility in conceiving humorous types of character, for the wide range of his sympathies, for his vigorous, if sometimes commonplace, style, and for the readiness with which he adapts himself to his subject whether grave or gay in character. With Addison he could not compete in delicacy of humour, in scholarly precision, or refinement of thought; but he undoubtedly possessed greater originality of invention, and perhaps a more masculine turn of mind.

**BUDGELL.**

The third of the contributors to the Coverley papers was Eustace Budgell, born in 1685. Like Addison and Steele, he owed part of his education to Oxford, and like the former became a good classical scholar, besides being well read in the best English, French, and Italian authors. From Oxford he proceeded to the Inner Temple, but forsaking law gave himself up to literature. He was befriended by Addison, a connection on the mother's side, and when the latter was appointed secretary to Lord Wharton, Lord Lieutenant of Ireland, in 1710, he took Budgell with him as one of the clerks of his office. Later on, through Addison's interest, he obtained several other appointments of much larger emolument; but owing to a lampoon in which he was unwise enough to satirize the Duke of Bolton, then Lord-Lieutenant of Ireland, under whom he was serving, he forfeited his appointment of comptroller-general of the revenue in Ireland, and was obliged to return to England. Further misfortunes soon befel him. In 1720 he lost £20,000 in the South Sea scheme, and wasted a further sum of £5,000 in an unsuccessful attempt to get into parliament. In 1733, on the death of Dr. Tindal, a legacy of two thousand guineas was willed to him; but the bequest (which it was alleged had been inserted in the will by Budgell himself) was successfully disputed by the next of kin, and the unfortunate man, now in great straits, betook himself to the study of law as the only source of livelihood left to him. After being called to the bar and attending the courts for some time, he found his

affairs desperate, and in 1736 he put an end to his life by drowning himself. He was a contributor to the *Tatler* and the *Guardian* as well as to the *Spectator*, and in 1733 he set on foot a weekly periodical, called the *Bee*, which ran for above a hundred numbers. His writings, if not possessed of any striking qualities, are those of an educated and well-read man, while the two papers included in the present selection betray a turn for humour, with perhaps an attempt at imitating Addison's literary style and habit of thought.

### THE COVERLEY PAPERS.

To Steele, as has been often pointed out, is due the suggestion of Sir Roger's character; and his paper "Of the Club" shadows forth almost all those traits which Addison afterwards expanded and developed with such happy skill. A type of the country gentleman of those days, Sir Roger has the pride of birth and long descent which belonged to his order, the foibles and oddities that come of a life narrowed by converse chiefly with men of his own class or those in dependence on him, the further foibles and oddities caused by a disappointment in love which drove him back upon himself yet without souring his nature, the vigorous geniality which life in the open air and the healthy excitement of field sports encourage, the simplicity of a heart that has hardly known what it is to be deceived, a proper sense of his position as a county magnate and of the duties that position involves, the duty of setting an example of decorum in church, the duty of strictly preserving game, of looking askance at gipsies, of assert-



ing his dignity at quarter-sessions, where, as Steele humorously tells us, he on a certain occasion "gained universal applause by explaining a passage in the Game Act," the duty of ungrudging hospitality, the duty of avoiding a Whig inn, even at the cost of thin beer and ill-kept mutton. With these and such-like themes for his discourse, Addison loves to disport himself, drawing from each topic some quaint lesson of morality, some material for playful satire, some occasion for depicting the occupations, pursuits, and social doings of a class of men even then fast passing away. If, a Whig himself, he finds food for mirth in the eccentricities of the simple-minded Tory squire, it is with a tender hand that he holds him up for our amusement, and with genuine delight that he sets in relief the amiable qualities which mingle with each weakness and more than excuse the old-world prejudices of a character as much the outcome of its surroundings as due to the moulding of nature. With all his sly ridicule of whims and caprices, of ignorances and illiberalities, he takes care that nothing like contempt should be suggested, that nothing but love and respect should be felt for one who is all love for his fellow-creatures, and who never forgets his own self-respect. Addison is in fact a gentleman, in the best sense of the word, dealing with a gentleman; and the mark of his persiflage is not a butt for his scorn. This delicacy of feeling no doubt influenced his coadjutors, and if his richness of fancy and the exquisite touch of his raillery have given to the original outline a finish that was beyond their powers, they have at least not unworthily followed the master hand in their share of the Coverley picture.



## THE SPECTATOR.

### I. THE SPECTATOR'S ACCOUNT OF HIMSELF.

No. 1.]      Thursday, March 1, 1710-11.      [Addison.

*Non fumum ex fulgore, sed ex fumo dare lucem  
Cogitat, ut speciosa dehinc miracula promat.*

*Hor. A. P. 143.*

One with a flash begins, and ends in smoke;  
Another out of smoke brings glorious light,  
And (without raising expectation high)  
Surprises us with dazzling miracles.—Roscommon.

I HAVE observed, that a reader seldom peruses a book with pleasure till he knows whether the writer of it be a black or a fair man, of a mild or choleric disposition, married or a bachelor, with other particulars of the like nature, that 10 conduce very much to the right understanding of an author. To gratify this curiosity, which is so natural to a reader, I design this paper, and my next, as prefatory discourses to my following writings, and shall give some account in them of the several persons that are engaged in this work. As the chief trouble of compiling, digesting, and correcting will fall to my share, I must do myself the justice to open the work with my own history.

I was born to a small hereditary estate, which according to the tradition of the village where it lies, was bounded by 20 the same hedges and ditches in William the Conqueror's

time that it is at present, and has been delivered down from father to son whole and entire, without the loss or acquisition of a single field or meadow, during the space of six hundred years. There runs a story in the family, that, some time before my birth, my mother dreamt that her child was to be a judge. Whether this might proceed from a law-suit which was then depending in the family, or my father's being a justice of the peace, I cannot determine; for I am not so vain as to think it presaged any  
10 dignity that I should arrive at in my future life, though that was the interpretation which the neighbourhood put upon it. The gravity of my behaviour at my very first appearance in the world, and afterwards, seemed to favour my mother's dream: for, as she has often told me, I threw away my rattle before I was two months old, and would not make use of my coral till they had taken away the bells from it.

As for the rest of my infancy, there being nothing in it remarkable, I shall pass it over in silence. I find that, during  
20 my nonage, I had the reputation of a very sullen youth, but was always a favourite of my schoolmaster, who used to say, *that my parts were solid, and would wear well*. I had not been long at the university, before I distinguished myself by a most profound silence: for, during the space of eight years, excepting in the public exercises of the college, I scarce uttered the quantity of an hundred words; and indeed do not remember that I ever spoke three sentences together in my whole life. Whilst I was in this learned  
30 body, I applied myself with so much diligence to my studies, that there are very few celebrated books, either in the learned or the modern tongues, which I am not acquainted with.

Upon the death of my father I was resolved to travel into foreign countries, and therefore left the university, with the character of an odd unaccountable fellow, that had a great deal of learning, if I would but show it. An insati-

able thirst after knowledge carried me into all the countries of Europe, in which there was anything new or strange to be seen; nay, to such a degree was my curiosity raised, that having read the controversies of some great men concerning the antiquities of Egypt, I made a voyage to Grand Cairo, on purpose to take measure of a pyramid; and, as soon as I had set myself right in that particular, returned to my native country with great satisfaction.

I have passed my latter years in this city, where I am frequently seen in most public places, though there are not 10 above half a dozen of my select friends that know me; of whom my next paper shall give a more particular account. There is no place of general resort wherein I do not often make my appearance; sometimes I am seen thrusting my head into a round of politicians at Will's, and listening with great attention to the narratives that are made in those little circular audiences. Sometimes I smoke a pipe at Child's, and while I seem attentive to nothing but the *Post-Man*, overhear the conversation of every table in the room. I appear on Sunday nights at St. James's coffee house, and 20 sometimes join the little committee of politics in the inner room, as one who comes there to hear and improve. My face is likewise very well known at the Grecian, the Cocoa-Tree, and in the theatres both of Drury Lane and the Hay-Market. I have been taken for a merchant upon the Exchange for above these ten years, and sometimes pass for a Jew in the assembly of stock-jobbers at Jonathan's. In short, wherever I see a cluster of people, I always mix with them, though I never open my lips but in my own club.

Thus I live in the world, rather as a spectator of man- 30 kind, than as one of the species, by which means I have made myself a speculative statesman, soldier, merchant, and artizan, without ever meddling with any practical part in life. I am very well versed in the theory of a husband, or a father, and can discern the errors in the economy, business, and diversion of others, better than those who are

engaged in them; as standers-by discover blots, which are apt to escape those who are in the game. I never espoused any party with violence, and am resolved to observe an exact neutrality between the Whigs and Tories, unless I shall be forced to declare myself by the hostilities of either side. In short, I have acted in all the parts of my life as a looker-on, which is the character I intend to preserve in this paper.

I have given the reader just so much of my history and character, as to let him see I am not altogether unqualified  
10 for the business I have undertaken. As for other particulars in my life and adventures, I shall insert them in following papers, as I shall see occasion. In the meantime, when I consider how much I have seen, read, and heard, I begin to blame my own taciturnity; and since I have neither time nor inclination to communicate the fulness of my heart in speech, I am resolved to do it in writing, and to print myself out, if possible, before I die. I have been often told by my friends that it is pity so many useful discoveries which I have made, should be in the possession of a silent man.  
20 For this reason, therefore, I shall publish a sheet full of thoughts every morning, for the benefit of my contemporaries; and if I can any way contribute to the diversion or improvement of the country in which I live, I shall leave it, when I am summoned out of it, with the secret satisfaction of thinking that I have not lived in vain.

There are three very material points which I have not spoken to in this paper, and which, for several important reasons, I must keep to myself, at least for some time: I mean, an account of my name, my age, and my lodgings. I  
30 must confess I would gratify my reader in anything that is reasonable; but as for these three particulars, though I am sensible they might tend very much to the embellishment of my paper, I cannot yet come to a resolution of communicating them to the public. They would indeed draw me out of that obscurity which I have enjoyed for many years, and expose me in public places to several salutes and civilities,

which have been always very disagreeable to me; for the greatest pain I can suffer, is the being talked to, and being stared at. It is for this reason likewise, that I keep my complexion and dress as very great secrets; though it is not impossible, but I may make discoveries of both in the progress of the work I have undertaken.

After having been thus particular upon myself, I shall in to-morrow's paper give an account of those gentlemen who are concerned with me in this work; for, as I have before intimated, a plan of it is laid and concerted (as all other 10 matters of importance are) in a club. However, as my friends have engaged me to stand in the front, those who have a mind to correspond with me, may direct their letters *To the Spectator*, at Mr. Buckley's, in Little Britain. For I must further acquaint the reader that, though our club meets only on Tuesdays and Thursdays, we have appointed a committee to sit every night, for the inspection of all such papers as may contribute to the advancement of the public weal.

C.

## II. OF THE CLUB.

No. 2.]

Friday, March 2, 1710-11.

[Steele.

Ast alii sex

20

Et plures, uno conclamant ore.—Juv. *Sat.* vii. 167.

Six more at least join their consenting voice.

THE first of our society is a gentleman of Worcestershire of an ancient descent, a baronet, his name Sir Roger de Coverley. His great-grandfather was inventor of that famous country-dance which is called after him. All who know that shire are very well acquainted with the parts and merits of Sir Roger. He is a gentleman that is very singular in his behaviour, but his singularities proceed from his good sense, and are contradictions to the manners of the world, only as 30

he thinks the world is in the wrong. However, this humour creates him no enemies, for he does nothing with sourness or obstinacy; and his being unconfined to modes and forms, makes him but the readier and more capable to please and oblige all who know him. When he is in town he lives in Soho Square. It is said, he keeps himself a bachelor by reason he was crossed in love by a perverse beautiful widow of the next county to him. Before this disappointment, Sir Roger was what you call a fine gentleman, had often supped  
10 with my Lord Rochester and Sir George Etherege, fought a duel upon his first coming to town, and kicked Bully Dawson in a public coffee-house for calling him youngster. But being ill-used by the above-mentioned widow, he was very serious for a year and a half; and though his temper being naturally jovial, he at last got over it, he grew careless of himself and never dressed afterwards. He continues to wear a coat and doublet of the same cut that were in fashion at the time of his repulse, which, in his merry humours, he tells us, has been in and out twelve times since he first wore it. He  
20 is now in his fifty-sixth year, cheerful, gay, and hearty; keeps a good house both in town and country; a great lover of mankind; but there is such a mirthful cast in his behaviour, that he is rather beloved than esteemed. His tenants grow rich, his servants look satisfied, all the young women profess love to him, and the young men are glad of his company. When he comes into a house he calls the servants by their names, and talks all the way upstairs to a visit. I must not omit that Sir Roger is a justice of the quorum; that he fills the chair at a quarter-session with great abilities, and three months  
30 ago, gained universal applause by explaining a passage in the Game Act.

The gentleman next in esteem and authority among us is another bachelor, who is a member of the Inner-Temple; a man of great probity, wit and understanding; but he has chosen his place of residence rather to obey the direction of an old humoursome father, than in pursuit of this own inclin-

ations. He was placed there to study the laws of the land, and is the most learned of any of the house in those of the stage. Aristotle and Longinus are much better understood by him than Littleton or Coke. The father sends up every post questions relating to marriage-articles, leases, and tenures, in the neighbourhood; all which questions he agrees with an attorney to answer and take care of in the lump. He is studying the passions themselves, when he should be inquiring into the debates among men which arise from them. He knows the argument of each of the orations of Demos- 10 thenes and Tully, but not one case in the reports of our own courts. No one ever took him for a fool, but none, except his intimate friends, know he has a great deal of wit. This turn makes him at once both disinterested and agreeable. As few of his thoughts are drawn from business, they are most of them fit for conversation. His taste of books is a little too just for the age he lives in; he has read all, but approves of very few. His familiarity with the customs, manners, actions, and writings of the ancients, makes him a very delicate observer of what occurs to him in the present world. He is 20 an excellent critic, and the time of the play is his hour of business; exactly at five he passes through New-Inn, crosses through Russel Court, and takes a turn at Will's till the play begins; he has his shoes rubbed and his perriwig powdered at the barber's as you go into the Rose. It is for the good of the audience when he is at a play, for the actors have an ambition to please him.

The person of next consideration is Sir Andrew Freeport, a merchant of great eminence in the city of London. A person of indefatigable industry, strong reason, and great ex- 30 perience. His notions of trade are noble and generous, and (as every rich man has usually some sly way of jesting, which would make no great figure were he not a rich man) he calls the sea the British common. He is acquainted with commerce in all its parts, and will tell you it is a stupid and barbarous way to extend dominion by arms; for true power



is to be got by arts and industry. He will often argue, that if this part of our trade were well cultivated, we should gain from one nation; and if another, from another. I have heard him prove that diligence makes more lasting acquisitions than valour, and that sloth has ruined more nations than the sword. He abounds in several frugal maxims, amongst which the greatest favourite is, 'A penny saved is a penny got.' A general trader of good sense is pleasanter company than a general scholar; and Sir Andrew having a  
10 natural unaffected eloquence, the perspicuity of his discourse gives the same pleasure that wit would in another man. He has made his fortunes himself; and says that England may be richer than other kingdoms, by as plain methods as he himself is richer than other men; though at the same time I can say this of him, that there is not a point in the compass, but blows home a ship in which he is an owner.

Next to Sir Andrew in the club-room sits Captain Sentry, a gentleman of great courage, good understanding, but invincible modesty. He is one of those that deserve very well,  
20 but are very awkward at putting their talents within the observation of such as should take notice of them. He was some years a captain, and behaved himself with great gallantry in several engagements, and at several sieges; but having a small estate of his own, and being next heir to Sir Roger, he has quitted a way of life in which no man can rise suitably to his merit, who is not something of a courtier, as well as a soldier. I have heard him often lament, that in a profession where merit is placed in so conspicuous a view, impudence should get the better of modesty. When he has talked to  
30 this purpose, I never heard him make a sour expression, but frankly confess that he left the world because he was not fit for it. A strict honesty and an even regular behaviour, are in themselves obstacles to him that must press through crowds who endeavour at the same end with himself, the favour of a commander. He will, however, in this way of talk, excuse generals, for not disposing according to men's



desert, or inquiring into it: for, says he, that great man who has a mind to help me, has as many to break through to come at me, as I have to come at him: therefore he will conclude, that the man who would make a figure, especially in a military way, must get over all false modesty, and assist his patron against the importunity of other pretenders, by a proper assurance in his own vindication. He says it is a civil cowardice to be backward in asserting what you ought to expect, as it is a military fear to be slow in attacking when it is your duty. With this candour does the gentleman speak of 10 himself and others. The same frankness runs through all his conversation. The military part of his life has furnished him with many adventures, in the relation of which he is very agreeable to the company; for he is never over-bearing, though accustomed to command men in the utmost degree below him; nor ever too obsequious, from an habit of obeying men highly above him.

But that our society may not appear a set of humorists unacquainted with the gallantries and pleasures of the age, we have among us the gallant Will Honeycomb, a gentleman 20 who, according to his years, should be in the decline of his life, but having ever been very careful of his person, and always had a very easy fortune, time has made but very little impression, either by wrinkles on his forehead, or traces in his brain. His person is well turned, and of a good height. He is very ready at that sort of discourse with which men usually entertain women. He has all his life dressed very well, and remembers habits as others do men. He can smile when one speaks to him, and laughs easily. He knows the history of every mode, and can inform you from which of the 30 French king's favourites our wives and daughters had this manner of curling their hair or that way of placing their hoods. In a word, all his conversation and knowledge has been in the female world. As other men of his age will take notice to you what such a minister said upon such and such an occasion, he will tell you when the Duke of Monmouth

danced at court, such a woman was then smitten, another was taken with him at the head of his troop in the Park. In all these important relations, he has ever about the same time received a kind glance, or a blow of a fan, from some celebrated beauty, mother of the present Lord such-a-one. This way of talking of his very much enlivens the conversation among us of a more sedate turn; and I find there is not one of the company but myself, who rarely speak at all, but speaks of him as that sort of man, who is usually called a  
10 well-bred fine gentleman.

I cannot tell whether I am to account him whom I am next to speak of, as one of our company; for he visits us but seldom, but when he does, it adds to every man else a new enjoyment of himself. He is a clergyman, a very philosophic man, of general learning, great sanctity of life, and the most exact good breeding. He has the misfortune to be of a very weak constitution, and consequently cannot accept of such cares and business as preferments in his function would oblige him to: he is therefore among divines what a chamber-  
20 counsellor is among lawyers. The probity of his mind, and the integrity of his life, create him followers, as being eloquent or loud advances others. He seldom introduces the subject he speaks upon; but we are so far gone in years, that he observes when he is among us an earnestness to have him fall on some divine topic, which he always treats with much authority, as one who has no interests in this world, as one who is hastening to the object of all his wishes, and conceives hope from his decays and infirmities. These are my ordinary companions.

R.

## III. SIR ROGER AT HOME.

No. 106]

Monday, July 2, 1711.

[Addison.

Hinc tibi copia

Manabit ad plenum, benigno

Ruris honorum opulenta cornu.—*Hor. 1 Od. xvii. 14.*

Here Plenty's liberal horn shall pour

Of fruits for thee a copious show'r

Rich honours of the quiet plain.

HAVING often received an invitation from my friend Sir Roger de Coverley to pass away a month with him in the country, I last week accompanied him thither, and am settled with him for some time at his country-house, where I intend to form several of my ensuing speculations. Sir Roger, who is very well acquainted with my humour, lets me rise and go to bed when I please; dine at his own table, or in my chamber, as I think fit; sit still, and say nothing, without bidding me be merry. When the gentlemen of the country come to see him, he only shows me at a distance. As I have been walking in his fields, I have observed them stealing a sight of me over a hedge, and have heard the knight desiring them not to let me see them, for that I hated to be stared at.

20

I am the more at ease in Sir Roger's family, because it consists of sober and staid persons; for as the knight is the best master in the world, he seldom changes his servants; and as he is beloved by all about him, his servants never care for leaving him: by this means his domestics are all in years, and grown old with their master. You would take his valet de chambre for his brother; his butler is grey-headed; his groom is one of the gravest men that I have ever seen; and his coachman has the looks of a privy-councillor. You see the goodness of the master even in the old house-dog; and in a gray pad that

30

is kept in the stable with great care and tenderness out of regard to his past services, though he has been useless for several years.

I could not but observe with a great deal of pleasure, the joy that appeared in the countenances of these ancient domestics upon my friend's arrival at his country-seat. Some of them could not refrain from tears at the sight of their old master; every one of them pressed forward to do something for him, and seemed discouraged if they were not employed. At the same time the good old knight, with a mixture of the father and the master of the family, tempered the inquiries after his own affairs with several kind questions relating to themselves. This humanity and good-nature engages everybody to him, so that when he is pleasant upon any of them all his family are in good humour, and none so much as the person whom he diverts himself with: on the contrary, if he coughs, or betrays any infirmity of old age, it is easy for a stander-by to observe a secret concern in the looks of all his servants.

My worthy friend has put me under the particular care of his butler, who is a very prudent man, and, as well as the rest of his fellow-servants, wonderfully desirous of pleasing me, because they have often heard their master talk of me as of his particular friend.

My chief companion, when Sir Roger is diverting himself in the woods or the fields, is a very venerable man, who is ever with Sir Roger, and has lived at his house in the nature of a chaplain above thirty years. This gentleman is a person of good sense, and some learning, of a very regular life, and obliging conversation: he heartily loves Sir Roger, and knows that he is very much in the old knight's esteem; so that he lives in the family rather as a relation than a dependent.

I have observed in several of my papers, that my friend Sir Roger, amidst all his good qualities, is something of a

humorist; and that his virtues, as well as imperfections, are, as it were, tinged by a certain extravagance, which makes them particularly his and distinguishes them from those of other men. This cast of mind, as it is generally very innocent in itself, so it renders his conversation highly agreeable, and more delightful than the same degree of sense and virtue would appear in their common and ordinary colours. As I was walking with him last night, he asked me how I liked the good man whom I have just now mentioned; and, without staying for my answer, told 10 me, that he was afraid of being insulted with Latin and Greek at his own table; for which reason, he desired a particular friend of his at the University, to find him out a clergyman rather of plain sense than much learning, of a good aspect, a clear voice, a sociable temper, and, if possible, a man that understood a little of backgammon. "My friend" (says Sir Roger) "found me out this gentleman, who, besides the endowments required of him, is, they tell me, a good scholar, though he does not show it. I have given him the parsonage of the parish; and because I know his value, have 20 settled upon him a good annuity for life. If he outlives me, he shall find that he was higher in my esteem than perhaps he thinks he is. He has now been with me thirty years; and, though he does not know I have taken notice of it, has never in all that time asked anything of me for himself, though he is every day soliciting me for something in behalf of one or other of my tenants, his parishioners. There has not been a law-suit in the parish since he has lived among them: if any dispute arises, they apply themselves to him for the decision; if they do not acquiesce in his judgment, 30 which I think never happened above once, or twice at most, they appeal to me. At his first settling with me, I made him a present of all the good sermons which have been printed in English, and only begged of him that every Sunday he would pronounce one of them in the pulpit. Accordingly, he has digested them into such a series, that

they follow one another naturally, and make a continued system of practical divinity."

- As Sir Roger was going on in his story, the gentleman we were talking of came up to us; and upon the knight's asking him who preached to-morrow (for it was Saturday night), told us, the Bishop of St. Asaph in the morning, and Dr. South in the afternoon. He then showed us his list of preachers for the whole year, where I saw, with a great deal of pleasure, Archbishop Tillotson, Bishop Saunderson, Doctor Barrow, Doctor Calamy, with several living authors who have published discourses of practical divinity. I no sooner saw this venerable man in the pulpit, but I very much approved of my friend's insisting upon the qualifications of a good aspect and a clear voice; for I was so charmed with the gracefulness of his figure and delivery, as well as with the discourses he pronounced, that I think I never passed any time more to my satisfaction. A sermon repeated after this manner, is like the composition of a poet in the mouth of a graceful actor.
- 20 I could heartily wish that more of our country clergy would follow this example, and, instead of wasting their spirits in laborious compositions of their own, would endeavour after a handsome elocution, and all those other talents that are proper to enforce what has been penned by great masters. This would not only be more easy to themselves but more edifying to the people.

## IV. THE COVERLEY HOUSEHOLD.

No. 107.]

Tuesday, July 3, 1711.

[Steele.

*Æsopo ingentem statuam posuere Attici,  
 Servumque collocarunt æterna in basi,  
 Patere honoris scirent ut cunctis viam.*

Phædr. *Epilog.* 1. 2.

The Athenians erected a large statue to *Æsop*, and placed him, though a slave, on a lasting pedestal; to shew, that the way to honour lies open indifferently to all.

THE reception, manner of attendance, undisturbed freedom and quiet, which I meet with here in the country has confirmed me in the opinion I always had, that the general corruption of manners in servants is owing 10 to the conduct of masters. The aspect of every one in the family carries so much satisfaction, that it appears he knows the happy lot which has befallen him in being a member of it. There is one particular which I have seldom seen but at Sir Roger's; it is usual in all other places, that servants fly from the parts of the house through which their master is passing; on the contrary, here they industriously place themselves in his way; and it is on both sides, as it were, understood as a visit, when the servants appear without calling. This 20 proceeds from the humane and equal temper of the man of the house, who also perfectly well knows how to enjoy a great estate, with such economy as ever to be much beforehand. This makes his own mind untroubled, and consequently unapt to vent peevish expressions, or give passionate or inconsistent orders to those about him. Thus respect and love go together; and a certain cheerfulness in performance of their duty is the particular distinction of the lower part of this family. When a servant is called before his master, he does not come with an expectation 30 to hear himself rated for some trivial fault, threatened to



be stripped, or used with any other unbecoming language which mean masters often give to worthy servants; but, it is often to know, what road he took that he came so readily back according to order; whether he passed by such a ground; if the old man who rents it is in good health; or whether he gave Sir Roger's love to him, or the like.

A man who preserves a respect founded on his benevolence to his dependents, lives rather like a prince than a master in his family; his orders are received as favours rather than duties; and the distinction of approaching him is part of the reward for executing what is commanded by him.

There is another circumstance in which my friend excels in his management, which is the manner of rewarding his servants. He has ever been of opinion, that giving his cast clothes to be worn by valets has a very ill effect upon little minds, and creates a silly sense of equality between the parties, in persons affected only with outward things. I have heard him often pleasant on this occasion, and describe a young gentleman abusing his man in that coat, which a month or two before was the most pleasing distinction he was conscious of in himself. He would turn his discourse still more pleasantly upon the bounties of the ladies of this kind; and I have heard him say he knew a fine woman, who distributed rewards and punishments in giving becoming or unbecoming dresses to her maids.

But my good friend is above these little instances of goodwill, in bestowing only trifles on his servants; a good servant to him is sure of having it in his choice very soon of being no servant at all. As I before observed he is so good a husband, and knows so thoroughly that the skill of the purse is the cardinal virtue of this life; I say he knows so well that frugality is the support of generosity, that he can often spare a large fine when a

tenement falls, and give that settlement to a good servant who has a mind to go into the world, or make a stranger pay the fine to that servant, for his more comfortable maintenance, if he stays in his service.

A man of honour and generosity considers it would be miserable to himself to have no will but that of another, though it were of the best person breathing, and for that reason goes on as fast as he is able to put his servants into independent livelihoods. The greatest part of Sir Roger's estate is tenanted by persons who have served 10 himself or his ancestors. It was to me extremely pleasant to observe the visitants from the several parts to welcome his arrival into the country: and all the difference that I could take notice of between the late servants who came to see him, and those who stayed in the family, was that these latter were looked upon as finer gentlemen and better courtiers.

This manumission and placing them in a way of livelihood, I look upon as only what is due to a good servant; which encouragement will make his successor be as diligent, 20 as humble, and as ready as he was. There is something wonderful in the narrowness of those minds, which can be pleased, and be barren of bounty to those who please them.

One might, on this occasion, recount the sense that great persons in all ages have had of the merit of their dependents, and the heroic services which men have done their masters in the extremity of their fortunes; and shown to their undone patrons, that fortune was all the difference between them; but as I design this my speculation only as a gentle admonition to thankless masters, I shall not 30 go out of the occurrences of common life, but assert it as a general observation, that I never saw, but in Sir Rogers family and one or two more, good servants treated as they ought to be. Sir Roger's kindness extends to their children's children, and this very morning he sent his coachman's grandson to prentice. I shall conclude this paper with an

account of a picture in his gallery, where there are many which will deserve my future observation.

At the very upper end of this very handsome structure I saw the portraiture of two young men standing in a river, the one naked, the other in a livery. The person supported seemed half dead, but still so much alive as to show in his face exquisite joy and love towards the other. I thought the fainting figure resembled my friend Sir Roger; and looking at the butler who stood by me, for  
 10 an account of it, he informed me that the person in the livery was a servant of Sir Roger's, who stood on the shore while his master was swimming, and observing him taken with some sudden illness, and sink under water, jumped in and saved him. He told me Sir Roger took off the dress he was in as soon as he came home, and by a great bounty at that time, followed by his favour ever since, had made him master of that pretty seat which we saw at a distance as we came to this house. I remembered indeed Sir Roger said, there lived a very worthy gentleman,  
 20 to whom he was highly obliged, without mentioning anything further. Upon my looking a little dissatisfied at some part of the picture, my attendant informed me that it was against Sir Roger's will, and at the earnest request of the gentleman himself, that he was drawn in the habit in which he had saved his master. R.

## V. CHARACTER OF WILL WIMBLE.

No. 108]

Wednesday, July 4, 1711.

[Addison.

Gratis anhelans, multa agendo nihil agens.—Phaedr. *Fab.* v. 2.

Out of breath to no purpose, and very busy about nothing.

As I was yesterday morning walking with Sir Roger before his house, a country fellow brought him a huge fish,  
 30 which, he told him, Mr. William Wimble had caught that

very morning; and that he presented it with his service to him, and intended to come and dine with him. At the same time he delivered a letter, which my friend read to me as soon as the messenger left him.

“SIR ROGER,

“I desire you to accept of a jack, which is the best I have caught this season. I intend to come and stay with you a week, and see how the perch bite in the Black river. I observed with some concern, the last time I saw you upon the bowling-green, that your whip wanted á lash to it; I 10 will bring half a dozen with me that I twisted last week, which I hope will serve you all the time you are in the country. I have not been out of the saddle for six days last past, having been at Eton with Sir John's eldest son. He takes to his learning hugely.

“I am, Sir, your humble Servant,

“WILL WIMBLE.”

This extraordinary letter, and message that accompanied it, made me very curious to know the character and quality of the gentleman who sent them; which I found to be as 20 follows—Will Wimble is younger brother to a baronet, and descended of the ancient family of the Wimbles. He is now between forty and fifty; but being bred to no business, and born to no estate, he generally lives with his elder brother as superintendent of his game. He hunts a pack of dogs better than any man in the country, and is very famous for finding out a hare. He is extremely well versed in all the little handicrafts of an idle man; he makes a May-fly to a miracle; and furnishes the whole country with angle-rots. As he is a good-natured, officious fellow, and very much 30 esteemed upon account of his family, he is a welcome guest at every house, and keeps up a good correspondence among all the gentlemen about him. He carries a tulip root in his pocket from one to another, or exchanges a puppy between a couple of friends that live perhaps in the opposite sides of the county. Will is a particular favourite of all the young

heirs, whom he frequently obliges with a net that he has weaved, or a setting dog that he has made himself; he now and then presents a pair of garters of his own knitting to their mothers or sisters; and raises a great deal of mirth among them, by inquiring, as often as he meets them, "how they wear?" These gentleman-like manufactures, and obliging little humours, make Will the darling of the country.

Sir Roger was proceeding in the character of him, when he saw him make up to us with two or three hazel-twigs in his  
10 hand, that he had cut in Sir Roger's woods as he came through them in his way to the house. I was very much pleased to observe on one side the hearty and sincere welcome with which Sir Roger received him, and on the other, the secret joy which his guest discovered at sight of the good old knight. After the first salutes were over, Will desired Sir Roger to lend him one of his servants to carry a set of shuttlecocks, he had with him in a little box, to a lady that lived about a mile off, to whom it seems he had promised such a present for above this half-year. Sir Roger's back  
20 was no sooner turned, but honest Will began to tell me of a large cock pheasant that he had sprung in one of the neighbouring woods, with two or three other adventures of the same nature. Odd and uncommon characters are the game that I look for, and most delight in; for which reason I was as much pleased with the novelty of the person that talked to me, as he could be for his life with the springing of a pheasant, and therefore listened to him with more than ordinary attention.

In the midst of his discourse the bell rang to dinner, where  
30 the gentleman I have been speaking of had the pleasure of seeing the huge jack he had caught, served up for the first dish in a most sumptuous manner. Upon our sitting down to it, he gave us a long account how he had hooked it, played with it, foiled it, and at length drew it out upon the bank, with several other particulars, that lasted all the first course. A dish of wild fowl, that came afterwards, furnished con-

versation for the rest of the dinner, which concluded with a late invention of Will's for improving the quail-pipe.

Upon withdrawing into my room after dinner, I was secretly touched with compassion towards the honest gentleman that had dined with us: and could not but consider, with a great deal of concern, how so good an heart, and such busy hands, were wholly employed in trifles; that so much humanity should be so little beneficial to others, and so much industry so little advantageous to himself. The same temper of mind, and application to affairs, might have 10 recommended him to the public esteem, and have raised his fortune in another station of life. What good to his country, or himself, might not a trader or merchant have done with such useful, though ordinary, qualifications?

Will Wimble's is the case of many a younger brother of a great family, who had rather see their children starve like gentlemen, than thrive in a trade or profession that is beneath their quality. This humour fills several parts of Europe with pride and beggary. It is the happiness of a trading nation, like ours, that the younger sons, though 20 incapable of any liberal art or profession, may be placed in such a way of life, as may perhaps enable them to vie with the best of their family. Accordingly, we find several citizens that were launched into the world with narrow fortunes, rising by an honest industry to greater estates than those of their elder brothers. It is not improbable but Will was formerly tried at divinity, law, or physic; and that finding his genius did not lie that way, his parents gave him up at length to his own inventions. But certainly, however improper he might have been for 30 studies of a higher nature, he was perfectly well turned for the occupations of trade and commerce.

## VI. SIR ROGER'S ANCESTORS.

No. 109.]

Thursday, July 5, 1711.

[Steele.

*Abnormis sapiens.*—*Hor. 2. Sat. ii. 3.*

Of plain good sense, untutor'd in the schools.

I WAS this morning walking in the gallery, when Sir Roger entered at the end opposite to me, and advancing towards me, said he was glad to meet me among his relations, the de Coverleys, and hoped I liked the conversation of so much good company, who were as silent as myself. I knew he alluded to the pictures, and as he is a gentleman who does not a little value himself upon his ancient descent, I expected he would give me some account of them. We were now arrived at the upper end of the gallery, when the knight faced towards one of the pictures, and as we stood before it, he entered into the matter, after his blunt way of saying things as they occur to his imagination, without regular introduction, or care to preserve the appearance of chain of thought.

"It is," said he, "worth while to consider the force of dress; and how the persons of one age differ from those of another, merely by that only. One may observe also, that the general fashion of one age has been followed by one particular set of people in another, and by them preserved from one generation to another. Thus the vast jetting coat and small bonnet, which was the habit in Henry the Seventh's time, is kept on in the yeoman of the guard; not without a good and politic view, because they look a foot taller, and a foot and an half broader: besides, that the cap leaves the face expanded, and consequently more terrible, and fitter to stand at the entrances of palaces.

"This predecessor of ours you see is dressed after this manner, and his cheeks would be no larger than mine were



he in a hat as I am. He was the last man that won a prize in the Tilt-yard (which is now a common street before Whitehall). You see the broken lance that lies there by his right foot. He shivered that lance of his adversary all to pieces; and bearing himself, look you, sir, in this manner, at the same time he came within the target of the gentleman who rode against him, and taking him with incredible force before him on the pommel of his saddle, he in that manner rid the tournament over, with an air that shewed he did it rather to perform the 10 rule of the lists, than expose his enemy; however it appeared he knew how to make use of a victory, and with a gentle trot he marched up to a gallery where their mistress sate (for they were rivals), and let him down with laudable courtesy, and pardonable insolence. I do not know, but it might be exactly where the coffee-house is now.

"You are to know this, my ancestor was not only of a military genius, but fit also for the arts of peace, for he played on the bass-viol as well as any gentleman at court 20 you see where his viol hangs by his basket-hilt sword. The action at the Tilt-yard you may be sure won the fair lady, who was a maid of honour, and the greatest beauty of her time; here she stands the next picture. You see, sir, my great great great grandmother has on the new-fashioned petticoat, except that the modern is gathered at the waist; my grandmother appears as if she stood in a large drum, whereas the ladies now walk as if they were in a go-cart. For all this lady was bred at court, she became an excellent country-wife, she had ten children, and 30 when I show you the library, you shall see in her own hand (allowing for the difference of the language) the best receipt now in England both for an hasty-pudding and a white-pot.

"If you please to fall back a little, because it is necessary to look at the three next pictures at one view; these are

three sisters. She on the right hand, who is so very beautiful, died a maid; the next to her, still handsomer, had the same fate, against her will; this homely thing in the middle had both their portions added to her own, and was stolen by a neighbouring gentleman, a man of stratagem and resolution, for he poisoned three mastiffs to come at her, and knocked down two deer-stealers in carrying her off. Misfortunes happen in all families. The theft of this romp, and so much money, was no great matter to  
10 our estate. But the next heir that possessed it was this soft gentleman, whom you see there. Observe the small buttons, the little boots, the laces, the slashes about his clothes, and above all, the posture he is drawn in (which to be sure was his own choosing); you see he sits with one hand on a desk writing and looking as it were another way, like an easy writer, or a sonneteer. He was one of those that had too much wit to know how to live in the world; he was a man of no justice, but great good-manners; he ruined every body that had any thing to  
20 do with him, but never said a rude thing in his life; the most indolent person in the world, he would sign a deed that passed away half his estate with his gloves on, but would not put on his hat before a lady if it were to save his country. He is said to be the first that made love by squeezing the hand. He left the estate with ten thousand pounds debt upon it; but, however, by all hands I have been informed that he was every way the finest gentleman in the world. That debt lay heavy on our house for one generation, but it was retrieved by  
30 a gift from that honest man you see there, a citizen of our name, but nothing at all akin to us. I know Sir Andrew Freeport has said behind my back, that this man was descended from one of the ten children of the maid of honour I shewed you above; but it was never made out. We winked at the thing indeed, because money was wanting at that time."

Here I saw my friend a little embarrassed, and turned my face to the next portraiture.

Sir Roger went on with his account of the gallery in the following manner: "This man (pointing to him I looked at) I take to be the honour of our house—Sir Humphrey de Coverley; he was in his dealings as punctual as a tradesman, and as generous as a gentleman. He would have thought himself as much undone by breaking his word, as if it were to be followed by bankruptcy. He served his country as knight of this shire to his dying day. He found it no easy matter to maintain an integrity in his words and actions, even in things that regarded the offices which were incumbent upon him, in the care of his own affairs and relations of life, and therefore dreaded (though he had great talents) to go into employments of state, where he must be exposed to the snares of ambition. Innocence of life and great ability were the distinguishing parts of his character; the latter, he had often observed, had led to the destruction of the former, and he used frequently to lament that great and good had not the same signification. He was an excellent husbandman, but had resolved not to exceed such a degree of wealth; all above it he bestowed in secret bounties many years after the sum he aimed at for his own use was attained. Yet he did not slacken his industry, but to a decent old age spent the life and fortune which was superfluous to himself, in the service of his friends and neighbours."

Here we were called to dinner, and Sir Roger ended the discourse of this gentleman, by telling me, as we followed the servant, that this his ancestor, was a brave man, and narrowly escaped being killed in the civil wars; "For," said he, "he was sent out of the field upon a private message, the day before the battle of Worcester." The whim of narrowly escaping by having been within a day of danger, with other matters above mentioned, mixed

with good sense, left me at a loss whether I was more delighted with my friend's wisdom or simplicity. R.

## VII. ON GHOSTS AND APPARITIONS.

No. 110.]

Friday, July 6, 1711.

[Addison.

*Horror ubique animos, simul ipsa silentia terrent.*

*Virg. Aen. ii. 755*

All things are full of horror and affright,

And dreadful ev'n the silence of the night.—Dryden.

At a little distance from Sir Roger's house, among the ruins of an old abbey, there is a long walk of aged elms; which are shot up so very high, that when one passes under them, the rooks and crows that rest upon the tops  
 10 of them seem to be cawing in another region. I am very much delighted with this sort of noise, which I consider as a kind of natural prayer to that Being who supplies the wants of his whole creation, and who in the beautiful language of the Psalms, feedeth the young ravens that call upon him. I like this retirement the better because of an ill report it lies under of being haunted; for which reason (as I have been told in the family) no living creature ever walks in it besides the chaplain. My good friend the butler desired me with a very grave face not to venture  
 20 myself in it after sun-set, for that one of the footmen had been almost frightened out of his 'wits by a spirit that appeared to him in the shape of a black horse without an head; to which he added, that about a month ago one of the maids coming home late that way with a pail of milk upon her head, heard such a rustling among the bushes that she let it fall.

I was taking a walk in this place last night between the hours of nine and ten, and could not but fancy it one of the most proper scenes in the world for a ghost to  
 30 appear in. The ruins of the abbey are scattered up and

down on every side, and half covered with ivy and elder bushes, the harbours of several solitary birds which seldom make their appearance till the dusk of the evening. The place was formerly a churchyard, and has still several marks in it of graves and burying-places. There is such an echo among the old ruins and vaults, that if you stamp but a little louder than ordinary, you hear the sound repeated. At the same time the walk of elms, with the croaking of the ravens which from time to time are heard from the tops of them, looks exceeding solemn and 10. venerable. These objects naturally raise seriousness and attention; and when night heightens the awfulness of the place, and pours out her supernumerary horrors upon everything in it, I do not at all wonder that weak minds fill it with spectres and apparitions.

Mr. Locke, in his chapter of the Association of Ideas, has very curious remarks to shew how by the prejudice of education one idea often introduces into the mind a whole set that bear no resemblance to one another in the nature of things. Among several examples of this kind, 20 he produces the following instance. "The ideas of goblins and sprites have really no more to do with darkness than light: yet let but a foolish maid inculcate these often on the mind of a child, and raise them there together, possibly he shall never be able to separate them again so long as he lives; but darkness shall ever afterwards bring with it those frightful ideas, and they shall be so joined, that he can no more bear the one than the other."

As I was walking in this solitude, where the dusk of the evening conspired with so many other occasions of terror, I observed a cow grazing not far from me, which an imagination that was apt to startle might easily have construed into a black horse without an head: and I dare say the poor footman lost his wits upon some such trivial occasion.

My friend Sir Roger has often told me with a great

deal of mirth, that at his first coming to his estate he found three parts of his house altogether useless; that the best room in it had the reputation of being haunted, and by that means was locked up; that noises had been heard in his long galley, so that he could not get a servant to enter it after eight o'clock at night; that the door of one of his chambers was nailed up because there went a story in the family that a butler had formerly hanged himself in it; and that his mother who lived  
10 to a great age had shut up half the rooms in the house, in which either her husband, a son, or daughter, had died. The knight seeing his habitation reduced to so small a compass, and himself in a manner shut out of his own house, upon the death of his mother ordered all the apartments to be flung open, and exercised by his chaplain, who lay in every room one after another, and by that means dissipated their fears which had so long reigned in the family.

I should not thus have been particular upon these ridiculous horrors, did not I find them so very much prevail in all parts of the country. At the same time I think a person who is thus terrified with the imagination of ghosts and spectres much more reasonable than one who, contrary to the reports of all historians sacred and profane, ancient and modern, and to the traditions of all nations, thinks the appearance of spirits fabulous and groundless. Could not I give myself up to this general testimony of mankind, I should to the relations of particular persons who are now living, and whom I cannot distrust in other matters of  
30 fact. I might here add, that not only the historians, to whom we may join the poets, but likewise the philosophers of antiquity, have favoured this opinion. Lucretius himself, though by the course of his philosophy he was obliged to maintain that the soul did not exist separate from the body, makes no doubt of the reality of apparitions, and that men have often appeared after their death. This I

think very remarkable: he was so pressed with the matter of fact which he could not have the confidence to deny, that he was forced to account for it by one of the most absurd unphilosophical notions that was ever started. He tells us, That the surfaces of all bodies, are perpetually flying off from their respective bodies, one after another; and that these surfaces or thin cases that included each other whilst they were joined in the body like the coats of an onion, are sometimes seen entire when they are separated from it; by which means we often behold the 10 shapes and shadows of persons who are either dead or absent.

# VIII. SIR ROGER AT CHURCH.

No. 112.]

Monday, July 9, 1711.

[Addison.

Ἀθανάτους μὲν πρῶτα θεοὺς. νόμῳ ὡς διακρίνεται,  
Τιμῇ. —Pythag.

First, in obedience to thy country's rites,  
Worship th' immortal Gods.

I AM always very well pleased with a country Sunday, and think, if keeping holy the seventh day were only a human institution, it would be the best method that could have been thought of for the polishing and civilizing of mankind. 20 It is certain the country people would soon degenerate into a kind of savages and barbarians, were there not such frequent returns of a stated time, in which the whole village meet together with their best faces, and in their cleanliest habits, to converse with one another upon indifferent subjects, hear their duties explained to them, and join together in adoration of the Supreme Being. Sunday clears away the rust of the whole week, not only as it refreshes in their minds the notions of religion, but as it puts both the sexes upon appearing in their most agreeable forms, and exerting 30 all such qualities as are apt to give them a figure in the



eye of the village. A country fellow distinguishes himself as much in the churchyard, as a citizen does upon the Change, the whole parish-politics being generally discussed in that place either after sermon or before the bell rings.

My friend Sir Roger, being a good churchman, has beautified the inside of his church with several texts of his own choosing. He has likewise given a handsome pulpit-cloth, and railed in the communion-table at his own expense. He has often told me, that at his coming to his estate he  
10 found his parishioners very irregular; and that in order to make them kneel and join in the responses, he gave every one of them a hassock and a common-prayer book: and at the same time employed an itinerant singing-master, who goes about the country for that purpose, to instruct them rightly in the tunes of the psalms; upon which they now very much value themselves, and indeed outdo most of the country churches that I have ever heard.

As Sir Roger is landlord to the whole congregation, he keeps them in very good order, and will suffer no body to  
20 sleep in it besides himself; for if by chance he has been surprised into a short nap at sermon, upon recovering out of it he stands up and looks about him, and if he sees any body else nodding, either wakes them himself, or sends his servants to them. Several other of the old knight's particularities break out upon these occasions. Sometimes he will be lengthening out a verse in the singing psalms, half a minute after the rest of the congregation have done with it; sometimes when he is pleased with the matter of his devotion, he pronounces amen three or four times to  
30 the same prayer; and sometimes stands up when every body else is upon their knees, to count the congregation, or see if any of his tenants are missing.

I was yesterday very much surprised to hear my old friend, in the midst of the service, calling out to one John Matthews to mind what he was about, and not disturb the congregation. This John Matthews it seems is remarkable

for being an idle fellow, and at that time was kicking his heels for his diversion. This authority of the knight, though exerted in that odd manner which accompanies him in all circumstances of life, has a very good effect upon the parish, who are not polite enough to see any thing ridiculous in his behaviour; besides that the general good sense and worthiness of his character make his friends observe these little singularities as foils that rather set off than blemish his good qualities.

As soon as the sermon is finished, no body presumes to 10 stir till Sir Roger is gone out of the church. The knight walks down from his seat in the chancel between a double row of his tenants, that stand bowing to him on each side: and every now and then inquires how such an one's wife, or mother, or son, or father do, whom he does not see at church; which is understood as a secret reprimand to the person that is absent.

The chaplain has often told me, that upon a catechising-day, when Sir Roger has been pleased with a boy that answers well, he has ordered a bible to be given him next 20 day for his encouragement; and sometimes accompanies it with a flitch of bacon to his mother. Sir Roger has likewise added five pounds a year to the clerk's place; and that he may encourage the young fellows to make themselves perfect in the church service, has promised upon the death of the present incumbent who is very old, to bestow it according to merit.

The fair understanding between Sir Roger and his chaplain, and their mutual concurrence in doing good, is the more remarkable, because the very next village is 30 famous for the differences and contentions that rise between the parson and the 'squire, who live in a perpetual state of war. The parson is always preaching at the 'squire; and the 'squire to be revenged on the parson, never comes to church. The 'squire has made all his tenants atheists and tithe-stealers: while the parson instructs them every

Sunday in the dignity of his order, and insinuates to them in almost every sermon, that he is a better man than his patron. In short, matters are come to such an extremity, that the 'squire has not said his prayers either in public or private this half year; and that the parson threatens him, if he does not mend his manners, to pray for him in the face of the whole congregation.

Feuds of this nature, though too frequent in the country, are very fatal to the ordinary people; who are so used to be dazzled with riches, that they pay as much deference to the understanding of a man of an estate, as of a man of learning; and are very hardly brought to regard any truth, how important soever it may be, that is preached to them, when they know there are several men of five hundred a year who do not believe it. L.

#### .IX. HIS ACCOUNT OF HIS DISAPPOINTMENT IN LOVE.

No. 113.] Tuesday, July 10, 1711.

[Steele.

*Haerent infixi pectore vultus.*—Virg. *Aen.* iv. 4.

Her looks were deep imprinted in his heart.

In my first description of the company in which I pass most of my time, it may be remembered, that I mentioned a great affliction which my friend Sir Roger had met with in his youth; which was no less than a disappointment in love. It happened this evening, that we fell into a very pleasing walk at a distance from his house. As soon as we came into it, "It is," quoth the good old man, looking round him with a smile, "very hard, that any part of my land should be settled upon one who has used me so ill as the perverse widow did; and yet I am sure I could not see a sprig of any bough of this whole walk of trees, but I should reflect upon her and her severity. She has certainly the finest hand of any woman in the world.

You are to know, this was the place wherein I used to muse upon her: and by that custom I can never come into it, but the same tender sentiments revive in my mind, as if I had actually walked with that beautiful creature under these shades. I have been fool enough to carve her name on the bark of several of these trees; so unhappy is the condition of men in love, to attempt the removing of their passion by the methods which serve only to imprint it deeper. She has certainly the finest hand of any woman in the world."

10

Here followed a profound silence; and I was not displeased to observe my friend falling so naturally into a discourse, which I had ever before taken notice he industriously avoided. After a very long pause, he entered upon an account of this great circumstance in his life, with an air which I thought raised my idea of him above what I had ever had before; and gave me the picture of that cheerful mind of his, before it received that stroke which has ever since affected his words and actions. But he went on as follows:

20

"I came to my estate in my twenty-second year, and resolved to follow the steps of the most worthy of my ancestors who have inhabited this spot of earth before me, in all the methods of hospitality and good neighbourhood, for the sake of my fame; and in country sports and recreations, for the sake of my health. In my twenty-third year I was obliged to serve as sheriff of the county; and in my servants, officers, and whole equipage, indulged the pleasure of a young man (who did not think ill of his own person) in taking that public occasion of shewing my figure and behaviour to advantage. You may easily imagine to yourself what appearance I made, who am pretty tall, rid well, and was very well dressed, at the head of a whole county, with music before me, a feather in my hat, and my horse well bitted. I can assure you, I was not a little pleased with the kind looks and glances I had from all

30

the balconies and windows as I rode to the hall where the assizes were held. But when I came there, a beautiful creature in a widow's habit sat in court to hear the event of a cause concerning her dower. This commanding creature (who was born for the destruction of all who behold her) put on such a resignation in her countenance, and bore the whispers of all around the court with such a pretty uneasiness, I warrant you, and then recovered herself from one eye to another, until she was perfectly confused by meeting  
10 something so wistful in all she encountered, that at last, with a murrain to her, she cast her bewitching eye upon me. I no sooner met it but I bowed like a great surprised booby; and knowing her cause to be the first which came on, I cried, like a captivated calf as I was, "Make way for the defendant's witnesses." This sudden partiality made all the county immediately see the sheriff also was become a slave to the fine widow. During the time her cause was upon trial, she behaved herself, I warrant you, with such a deep attention to her business, took opportunities to have  
20 little billets handed to her counsel, then would be in such a pretty confusion, occasioned, you must know, by acting before so much company, that not only I but the whole court was prejudiced in her favour: and all that the next heir to her husband had to urge, was thought so groundless and frivolous, that when it came to her counsel to reply, there was not half so much said as every one besides in the court thought he could have urged to her advantage. You must understand, sir, this perverse woman is one of those unaccountable creatures that secretly rejoice in the  
30 admiration of men, but indulge themselves in no farther consequences. Hence it is that she has ever had a train of admirers, and she removes from her slaves in town to those in the country, according to the seasons of the year. She is a reading lady, and far gone in the pleasures of friendship. She is always accompanied by a confidant, who is witness to her daily protestations against our sex,

and consequently a bar to her first steps towards love, upon the strength of her own maxims and declarations.

“ However, I must need say, this accomplished mistress of mine has distinguished me above the rest, and has been known to declare Sir Roger de Coverley was the tamest and most humane of all the brutes in the country. I was told she said so, by one who thought he rallied me; but upon the strength of this slender encouragement of being thought least detestable, I made new liveries, new-paired my coach-horses, sent them all to town to be bitted, 10 and taught to throw their legs well, and move all together, before I pretended to cross the country, and wait upon her. As soon as I thought my retinue suitable to the character of my fortune and youth, I set out from hence to make my addresses. The particular skill of this lady has ever been to inflame your wishes, and yet command respect. To make her mistress of this art, she has a greater share of knowledge, wit, and good sense, than is usual even among men of merit. Then she is beautiful beyond the race of women. If you will not let her go on with a 20 certain artifice with her eyes, and the skill of beauty, she will arm herself with her real charms, and strike you with admiration. It is certain that if you were to behold the whole woman, there is that dignity in her aspect, that composure in her motion, that complacency in her manner, that if her form makes you hope, her merit makes you fear. But then again, she is such a desperate scholar, that no country-gentleman can approach her without being a jest. As I was going to tell you, when I came to her house I was admitted to her presence with great civility; 30 at the same time she placed herself to be first seen by me in such an attitude, as I think you call the posture of a picture, that she discovered new charms, and I at last came towards her with such an awe as made me speechless. This she no sooner observed but she made her advantage of it, and began a discourse to me concerning

love and honour, as they both are followed by pretenders, and the real votaries to them. When she discussed these points in a discourse, which I verily believe was as learned as the best philosopher in Europe could possibly make, she asked me whether she was so happy as to fall in with my sentiments on these important particulars. Her confident sat by her, and upon my being in the last confusion and silence, this malicious aid of hers turning to her says, I am very glad to observe Sir Roger pauses upon this  
10 subject, and seems resolved to deliver all his sentiments upon the matter when he pleases to speak. They both kept their countenances, and after I had sat half an hour meditating how to behave before such profound casuists; I rose up and took my leave. Chance has since that time thrown me very often in her way, and she as often has directed a discourse to me which I do not understand. This barbarity has kept me ever at a distance from the most beautiful object my eyes ever beheld. It is thus also she deals with all mankind, and you must make love  
20 to her, as you would conquer the sphynx, by posing her. But were she like other women, and that there were any talking to her, how constant must the pleasure of that man be, who would converse with a creature—But, after all, you may be sure her heart is fixed on some one or other, and yet I have been credibly informed; but who can believe half that is said! They say she sings excellently: her voice in her ordinary speech has something in it inexpressibly sweet. You must know I dined with her at a public table the day after I first saw her, and she helped  
30 me to some tansy in the eye of all the gentlemen in the country. She has certainly the finest hand of any woman in the world. I can assure you, sir, were you to behold her, you would be in the same condition; for as her speech is music, her form is angelic. But I find I grow irregular while I am talking of her; but indeed it would be stupidity to be unconcerned at such perfection.



Oh the excellent creature! she is as inimitable to all women, as she is inaccessible to all men."

I found my friend begin to rave, and insensibly led him towards the house, that we might be joined by some other company; and am convinced that the widow is the secret cause of all that inconsistency which appears in some parts of my friend's discourse; though he has so much command or himself as not directly to mention her, yet according to that of Martial, which one knows not how to render into English, *dum tacet hanc loquitur*. I 10 shall end this paper with that whole epigram, which represents with much humour my honest friend's condition:

Quicquid agit Rufus, nihil est, nisi Nævia Rufo,  
Si gaudeat, si flet, si tacet, hanc loquitur:  
Cænat, propinat, poscit, negat, annuit, una est  
Nævia; si non sit Nævia, mutus erit.  
Scriberet hesternæ patri cū luce salutem,  
Nævia lux, inquit, Nævia numen, ave.—*Epig.* i. 69.

Let Rufus weep, rejoice, stand, sit, or walk,  
Still he can nothing but of Nævia talk;  
Let him eat, drink, ask questions, or dispute,  
Still he must speak of Nævia, or be mute.  
He writ to his father, ending with this line,  
I am, my lovely Nævia, ever thine.

20

R.

## X. ON THE SHAME AND FEAR OF POVERTY.

No. 114.]

Wednesday, July 11, 1711.

[Steele.

Paupertatis pudor et fuga.—Hor. 1 *Ep.* xviii, 24.

The dread of nothing more  
Than to be thought necessitous and poor.—Pooley.

ECONOMY in our affairs has the same effect upon our fortune which good-breeding has upon our conversation. There is

a pretending behaviour in both cases, which instead of making men esteemed, renders them both miserable and contemptible. We had yesterday at Sir Roger's a set of country gentlemen who dined with him: and after dinner the glass was taken, by those who pleased, pretty plentifully. Among others I observed a person of a tolerable good aspect, who seemed to be more greedy of liquor than any of the company, and yet me thought he did not taste it with delight. As he grew warm, he was suspicious of every thing that was said, and as he advanced towards being fuddled, his humour grew worse. At the same time his bitterness seemed to be rather an inward dissatisfaction in his own mind, than any dislike he had taken to the company. Upon hearing his name, I knew him to be a gentleman of a considerable fortune in this county, but greatly in debt. What gives the unhappy man this peevishness of spirit is, that his estate is dipped, and is eating out with usury; and yet he has not the heart to sell any part of it. His proud stomach, at the cost of restless nights, constant inquietudes, danger of affronts, and a thousand nameless inconveniences, preserves this canker in his fortune, rather than it shall be said he is a man of fewer hundreds a year than he has been commonly reputed. Thus he endures the torment of poverty, to avoid the name of being less rich. If you go to his house, you see great plenty; but surved in a manner that shews it is all unnatural, and that the master's mind is not at home. There is a certain waste and carelessness in the air of every thing, and the whole appears but a covered indigence, a magnificent poverty. That neatness and cheerfulness which attends the table of him who lives within compass, is wanting, and exchanged for a libertine way of service in all about him.

This gentleman's conduct, though a very common way of management, is as ridiculous as that officer's would be, who had but few men under his command, and should take the charge of an extent of country rather than of a

small pass. To pay for, personate, and keep in a man's hands, a greater estate than he really has, is of all others the most unpardonable vanity, and must in the end reduce the man who is guilty of it to dishonour. Yet if we look round us in any county of Great-Britain, we shall see many in this fatal error; if that may be called by so soft a name, which proceeds from a false shame of appearing what they really are, when the contrary behaviour would in a short time advance them to the condition which they pretend to.

10

Laertes has fifteen hundred pounds a year; which is mortgaged for six thousand pounds; but it is impossible to convince him, that if he sold as much as would pay off that debt, he would save four shillings in the pound, which he gives for the vanity of being the reputed master of it. Yet if Laertes did this, he would perhaps be easier in his own fortune; but then Irus, a fellow of yesterday, who has but twelve hundred a year, would be his equal. Laertes and Irus are neighbours, whose way of living are an abomination to each other. Irus is moved by the 20 fear of poverty, and Laertes by the shame of it. Though the motive of action is of so near affinity in both, and may be resolved into this, "that to each of them poverty is the greatest of all evils," yet are their manners widely different. Shame of poverty makes Laertes launch into unnecessary equipage, vain expense, and lavish entertainments. Fear of poverty makes Irus allow himself only plain necessities, appear without a servant, sell his own corn, attend his labourers, and be himself a labourer. Shame of poverty makes Laertes go every day a step 30 nearer to it: and fear of poverty stirs up Irus to make every day some further progress from it.

These different motives produce the excesses which men are guilty of in the negligence of and provision for themselves. Usury, stock-jobbing, extortion, and oppression, have their seed in the dread of want; and vanity, riot,

and prodigality, from the shame of it: but both these excess are infinitely below the pursuit of a reasonable creature. After we have taken care to command so much as is necessary for maintaining ourselves in the order of men suitable to our character, the care of superfluities is a vice no less extravagant, than the neglect of necessities would have been before.

Certain it is, that they are both out of nature, when she is followed with reason and good sense. It is from  
10 this reflection that I always read Mr. Cowley with the greatest pleasure. His magnanimity is as much above that of other considerable men, as his understanding, and it is a true distinguishing spirit in the elegant author who published his works, to dwell so much upon the temper of his mind and the moderation of his desires. By this means he has rendered his friend as amiable as famous. That state of life which bears the face of poverty with Mr. Cowley's great vulgar, is admirably described; and it is  
20 no small satisfaction to those of the same turn of desire, that he produces the authority of the wisest men of the best age of the world, to strengthen his opinion of the ordinary pursuits of mankind.

It would methinks be no ill maxim of life, if, according to that ancestor of Sir Roger, whom I lately mentioned, every man would point to himself what sum he would resolve not to exceed. He might by this means cheat himself into a tranquility on this side of that expectation, or convert what he should get above it to nobler uses than his own pleasures or necessities. This temper of mind  
30 would exempt a man from an ignorant envy of restless men above him, and a more inexcusable contempt of happy men below him. This would be sailing by some compass, living with some design: but to be eternally bewildered, in prospects of future gain, and putting on unnecessary armour against improbable blows of fortune, is a mechanic being which has not good sense for its direction, but is

carried on by a sort of acquired instinct towards things below our consideration, and unworthy our esteem. It is possible that the tranquility I now enjoy at Sir Roger's may have created in me this way of thinking, which is so abstracted from the common relish of the world: but as I am now in a pleasing arbour surrounded with a beautiful landscape, I find no inclination so strong as to continue in these mansions, so remote from the ostentatious scenes of life; and am at this present writing philosopher enough to conclude with Mr. Cowley,

If e'er ambition did my fancy cheat  
With any wish so mean as to be great;  
Continue Heav'n, still from me to remove  
The humble blessings of that life I love.—T.

## XI. LABOUR AND EXERCISE.

No. 115.] Thursday, July 12, 1711. [Addison.

Ut sit mens sana in corpore sano.—Juv. *Sat.* x. 356.

Pray for a sound mind in a sound body.

BODILY labour is of two kinds, either that which a man submits to for his livelihood, or that which he undergoes for his pleasure. The latter of them generally changes the name of labour for that of exercise, but differs only from 20 ordinary labour as it rises from another motive.

A country life abounds in both these kinds of labour, and for that reason gives a man a greater stock of health, and consequently a more perfect enjoyment of himself, than any other way of life. I consider the body as a system of tubes and glands, or, to use a more rustic phrase, a bundle of pipes and strainers, fitted to one another after so wonderful a manner as to make a proper engine for the soul to work with. This description does not only comprehend the bowels, bones, tendons, 30 veins, nerves, and arteries, but every muscle and every

ligature which is a composition of fibres, that are so many imperceptible tubes or pipes interwoven on all sides with invisible glands or strainers.

This general idea of a human body, without considering it in the niceties of anatomy, lets us see how absolutely necessary labour is for the right preservation of it. There must be frequent motions and agitations, to mix, digest, and separate the juices contained in it, as well as to clear and cleanse that infinitude of pipes and strainers of which  
 10 it is composed, and to give their solid parts a more firm and lasting tone. Labour or exercise ferments the humours, casts them into their proper channels, throws off redundancies, and helps nature in those secret distributions, without which the body cannot subsist in its vigour, nor the soul act with cheerfulness.

I might here mention the effects which this has upon all the faculties of the mind, by keeping the understanding clear, the imagination untroubled, and refining those spirits that are necessary for the proper exertion of our  
 20 intellectual faculties, during the present laws of union between soul and body. It is to a neglect in this particular that we must ascribe the spleen, which is so frequent in men of studious and sedentary tempers, as well as the vapours to which those of the other sex are so often subject.

Had not exercise been absolutely necessary for our well-being, nature would not have made the body so proper for it, by giving such an activity to the limbs, and such a pliancy to every part as necessarily produce those com-  
 30 pressions, extensions, contortions, dilatations, and all other kinds of motions that are necessary for the preservation of such a system of tubes and glands as has been before mentioned. And that we might not want inducements to engage us in such an exercise of the body as is proper for its welfare, it is so ordered that nothing valuable can be procured without it. Not to mention riches and honour,

even food and raiment are not to be come at without the toil of the hands and sweat of the brows. Providence furnishes materials, but expects that we should work them up ourselves. The earth must be laboured before it gives its increase, and when it is forced into its several products, how many hands must they pass through before they are fit for use! Manufactures, trade, and agriculture, naturally employ more than nineteen parts of the species in twenty; and as for those who are not obliged to labour, by the condition in which they are born, they are more miserable 10 than the rest of mankind, unless they indulge themselves in that voluntary labour which goes by the name of exercise.

My friend Sir Roger has been an indefatigable man in business of this kind, and has hung several parts of his house with the trophies of his former labours. The walls of his great hall are covered with the horns of several kinds of deer that he has killed in the chace, which he thinks the most valuable furniture of his house, as they afford him frequent topics of discourse, and shew that he has not been idle. At the lower end of the hall is a 20 large otter's skin stuffed with hay, which his mother ordered to be hung up in that manner, and the knight looks upon with great satisfaction, because it seems he was but nine years old when his dog killed him. A little room adjoining to the hall is a kind of arsenal filled with guns of several sizes and inventions, with which the knight has made great havoc in the woods, and destroyed many thousands of pheasants, partridges, and woodcocks. His stable-doors are patched with noses that belonged to foxes of the knight's own hunting down. Sir Roger shewed me 30 one of them that for distinction sake has a brass nail struck through it, which cost him about fifteen hours' riding, carried him through half a dozen counties, killed him a brace of geldings, and lost above half his dogs. This the knight looks upon as one of the greatest exploits of his life. The perverse widow, whom



I have given some account of, was the death of several foxes; for Sir Roger has told me that in the course of his amours he patched the western door of his stable. Whenever the widow was cruel, the foxes were sure to pay for it. In proportion as his passion for the widow abated and old age came on, he left off fox-hunting; but a hare is not yet safe that sits within ten miles of his house.

There is no kind of exercise which I would so recommend to my readers of both sexes as this of riding, as there is none which so much conduces to health, and is every way accommodated to the body, according to the idea which I have given of it. Doctor Sydenham is very lavish in its praises; and if the English reader will see the mechanical effects of it described at length, he may find them in a book published not many years since, under the title of the *Medicina Gymnastica*. For my own part, when I am in town, for want of these opportunities, I exercise myself an hour every morning upon a dumb bell that is placed in a corner of my room, and it pleases me the more because it does every thing I require of it in the most profound silence. My landlady and her daughters are so well acquainted with my hours of exercise, that they never come into my room to disturb me whilst I am ringing.

When I was some years younger than I am at present, I used to employ myself in a more laborious diversion, which I learned from a Latin treatise of exercises that is written with great erudition: It is there called the *σχινομαχία*, or the fighting with a man's own shadow, and consists in the brandishing of two short sticks grasped in each hand, and loaden with plugs of lead at either end. This opens the chest, exercises the limbs, and gives a man all the pleasure of boxing, without the blows. I could wish that several learned men would lay out that time which they employ in controversies and disputes about nothing, in this method of fighting with their own shadows.

It might conduce very much to evaporate the spleen, which makes them uneasy to the public as well as to themselves.

To conclude, as I am a compound of soul and body, I consider myself as obliged to a double scheme of duties; and think I have not fulfilled the business of the day when I do not thus employ the one in labour and exercise, as well as the other in study and contemplation. L.

## XII. A HUNTING SCENE WITH SIR ROGER.

No. 116.] Friday, July 13, 1711. [Budgell.

Vocat ingenti clamore Cithæron,  
Taygetique canes.—Virg. *Georg.* iii. 43.  
The echoing hills and chiding hounds invite.

10

THOSE who have searched into human nature observe that nothing so much shews the nobleness of the soul, as that its felicity consists in action. Every man has such an active principle in him, that he will find out something to employ himself upon, in whatever place or state of life is posted. I have heard of a gentleman who was under close confinement in the Bastile seven years; during which time he amused himself in scattering a few small pins about his chamber, gathering them up again, and placing them in different figures on the arm of a great chair. He 20 often told his friends afterwards, that unless he had found out this piece of exercise, he verily believed he should have lost his senses.

After what has been said, I need not inform my readers, that Sir Roger, with whose character I hope they are at present pretty well acquainted, has in his youth gone through the whole course of those rural diversions which the country abounds in; and which seems to be extremely well suited to that laborious industry a man may observe here in a far greater degree than in towns and cities. I 30 have before hinted at some of my friend's exploits: he

has in his youthful days taken forty coveys of partridges in a season; and tired many a salmon with a line consisting but of a single hair. The constant thanks and good wishes of the neighbourhood always attended him, on account of his remarkable enmity towards foxes; having destroyed more of those vermin in one year, than it was thought the whole country could have produced. Indeed the knight does not scruple to own among his most intimate friends, that in order to establish his reputation  
10 this way, he has secretly sent for great numbers of them out of other counties, which he used to turn loose about the country by night, that he might the better signalize himself in their destruction the next day. His hunting horses were the finest and best managed in all these parts. His tenants are still full of the praises of a grey stone-horse that unhappily staked himself several years since, and was buried with great solemnity in the orchard.

Sir Roger, being at present too old for fox-hunting, to keep himself in action, has disposed of his beagles and got  
20 a pack of stop-hounds. What these want in speed, he endeavours to make amends for by the deepness of their mouths and the variety of their notes, which are suited in such manner to each other, that the whole cry makes up a complete concert. He is so nice in this particular, that a gentleman having made him a present of a very fine hound the other day, the knight returned it by the servant with a great many expressions of civility; but desired him to tell his master, that the dog he had sent was indeed a most excellent bass, but that at present he only  
30 wanted a counter-tenor. Could I believe my friend had ever read Shakespcare, I should certainly conclude he had taken the hint from Theseus in the Midsummer Night's Dream:

My hounds are bred out of the Spartan kind,  
So flu'd, so sanded; and their heads are hung  
With ears that sweep away the morning dew.

Crook-knee'd and dew-lap'd like Thessalian bulls,  
Slow in pursuit, but match'd in mouths like bells,  
Each under each. A cry more tuneable  
Was never halloo'd to, nor cheer'd with horn.

Sir Roger is so keen at this sport, that he has been out almost every day since I came down; and upon the chaplain's offering to lend me his easy pad, I was prevailed on yesterday morning to make one of the company. I was extremely pleased, as we rid along, to observe the general benevolence of all the neighbourhood, towards my 10 friend. The farmers' sons thought themselves happy if they could open a gate for the good old knight as he passed by; which he generally requited with a nod or a smile, and a kind enquiry after their fathers or uncles.

After we had rid about a mile from home, we came upon a large heath, and the sportsmen began to beat. They had done so for some time, when, as I was at a little distance from the rest of the company, I saw a hare pop out from a small furze-brake almost under my horse's feet. I marked the way she took, which I en- 20 deavoured to make the company sensible of by extending my arm; but to no purpose, till Sir Roger, who knows that none of my extraordinary motions are insignificant, rode up to me, and asked me, if puss was gone that way? Upon my answering, yes, he immediately called in the dogs, and put them upon the scent. As they were going off, I heard one of the country-fellows muttering to his companion, "that 'twas a wonder they had not lost all their sport, for want of the silent gentleman's crying Stole away." 30

This, with my aversion to leaping hedges, made me withdraw to a rising ground, from whence I could have the pleasure of the whole chace, without the fatigue of keeping in with the hounds. The hare immediately threw them about a mile behind her; but I was pleased to find, that instead of running straight forwards, or in hunter's

language, "flying the country," as I was afraid she might have done, she wheeled about, and described a sort of a circle round the hill where I had taken my station, in such a manner as gave me a very distinct view of the sport. I could see her first pass by, and the dogs some time afterwards unravelling the whole track she had made, and following her through all her doubles. I was at the same time delighted in observing that deference which the rest of the pack paid to each particular hound, 10 according to the character he had acquired amongst them. If they were at a fault, and an old hound of reputation opened but once, he was immediately followed by the whole cry; while a raw dog, or one who was a noted liar, might have yelped his heart out, without being taken notice of.

The hare now, after having squatted two or three times, and been put up again as often, came still nearer to the place where she was at first started. The dogs pursued her, and these were followed by the jolly knight, who 20 rode upon a white gelding, encompassed by his tenants and servants, and cheering his hounds with all the gaiety of five and twenty. One of the sportsmen rode up to me, and told me, that he was sure the chace was almost at an end, because the old dogs, which had hitherto lain behind, now headed the pack. The fellow was in the right. Our hare took a large field just under us, followed by the full cry in view. I must confess the brightness of the weather, the cheerfulness of every thing around me, the chiding of the hounds, which was returning upon us 30 in a double echo from two neighbouring hills, with the hallooing of the sportsmen, and the sounding of the horn, lifted my spirits into a most lively pleasure, which I freely indulged because I was sure it was innocent. If I was under any concern, it was on the account of the poor hare, that was now quite spent, and almost within the reach of her enemies; when the huntsman getting forward threw

down his pole before the dogs. They were now within eight yards of that game which they had been pursuing for almost as many hours; yet on the signal before-mentioned they all made a sudden stand, and though they continued opening as much as before, durst not once attempt to pass beyond the pole. At the same time Sir Roger rode forward, and alighting, took up the hare in his arms; which he soon after delivered up to one of his servants with an order, if she could be kept alive, to let her go in his great orchard; where it seems he has several of 10 these prisoners of war, who live together in a very comfortable captivity. I was highly pleased to see the discipline of the pack, and the good-nature of the knight, who could not find in his heart to murder a creature that had given him so much diversion.

As we were returning home, I remembered that monsieur Paschal in his most excellent discourse on the Misery of Man, tells us, that all our endeavours after greatness proceed from nothing but a desire of being surrounded by a multitude of persons and affairs that may hinder us from 20 looking into ourselves, which is a view we cannot bear. He afterwards goes on to shew that our love of sports comes from the same reason, and is particularly severe upon hunting. "What," says he, "unless it be to drown thought, can make men throw away so much time and pains upon a silly animal, which they might buy cheaper in the market?" The foregoing reflection is certainly just, when a man suffers his whole mind to be drawn into his sports, and altogether loses himself in the woods; but does not affect those who propose a far more laudable end 30 from this exercise, I mean, the preservation of health, and keeping all the organs of the soul in a condition to execute her orders. Had that incomparable person, whom I last quoted, been a little more indulgent to himself in this point, the world might probably have enjoyed him much longer; whereas through too great an application to

his studies in his youth he contracted that ill habit of body, which, after a tedious sickness, carried him off in the fortieth year of his age; and the whole history we have of his life till that time is but one continued account of the behaviour of a noble soul struggling under innumerable pains and distempers.

For my own part, I intend to hunt twice a week during my stay with Sir Roger; and shall prescribe the moderate use of this exercise to all my country friends, as the best  
10 kind of physic for mending a bad constitution, and preserving a good one.

I cannot do this better, than in the following lines out of Mr. Dryden:

20

The first physicians by debauch were made;  
Excess began, and sloth sustains the trade.  
By chace our long-liv'd fathers earn'd their food;  
Toil strung the nerves, and purify'd the blood;  
But we their sons, a pamper'd race of men,  
Are dwindled down to threescore years and ten.  
Better to hunt in fields for health unbought,  
Than see the doctor for a nauseous draught.  
The wise for cure on exercise depend:  
God never made his work for man to mend.

X.

### XIII. ON WITCHCRAFT—STORY OF MOLL WHITE.

No. 117.]

Saturday, July 14, 1711.

[Addison.

*Ipsi sibi somnia fingunt.*—Virg. *Ecl.* viii. 108.

With voluntary dreams they cheat their minds.

THERE are some opinions in which a man should stand neuter, without engaging his assent to one side or the other. Such a hovering faith as this, which refuses to settle upon any determination, is absolutely necessary in  
30 a mind that is carefull to avoid errors and prepossessions. When the arguments press equally on both sides in matters



that are indifferent to us, the safest method is to give up ourselves to neither.

It is with this temper of mind that I consider the subject of witchcraft. When I hear the relations that are made from all parts of the world, not only from Norway and Lapland, from the East and West-Indies, but from every particular nation in Europe, I cannot forbear thinking that there is such an intercourse and commerce with evil spirits, as that which we express by the name of witchcraft. But when I consider that the ignorant and 10 credulous parts of the world abound most in these relations, and that the persons among us, who are supposed to engage in such an infernal commerce, are people of a weak understanding and crazed imagination, and at the same time reflect upon the many impostures and delusions of this nature that have been detected in all ages, I endeavour to suspend my belief till I hear more certain accounts than any which have yet come to my knowledge. In short, when I consider the question, whether there are such persons in the world as those we call witches, 20 my mind is divided between the two opposite opinions, or rather (to speak my thoughts freely) I believe in general that there is, and has been such a thing as witchcraft; but at the same time can give no credit to any particular instance of it.

I am engaged in this speculation by some occurrences that I met with yesterday, which I shall give my reader an account of at large. As I was walking with my friend Sir Roger by the side of one of his woods, an old woman applied herself to me for my charity. Her dress and figure 30 put me in mind of the following description in Otway:

In a close lane as I pursu'd my journey  
I spy'd a wrinkled hag, with age grown double,  
Picking dry sticks, and mumbling to herself.  
Her eyes with scalding rheum were gall'd and red;  
Cold palsy shook her head; her hands seem'd wither'd;

And on her crooked shoulders had she wrapt  
The tatter'd remnant of an old strip'd hanging,  
Which serv'd to keep her carcase from the cold:  
So there was nothing of a piece about her.  
Her lower weeds were all o'er coarsely patch'd  
With different colour'd rags, black, red, white, yellow,  
And seem'd to speak variety of wretchedness.

As I was musing on this description, and comparing it with the object before me, the knight told me, that this  
10 very old woman had the reputation of a witch all over the country, that her lips were observed to be always in motion, and that there was not a switch about her house which her neighbours did not believe had carried her several hundreds of miles. If she chanced to stumble, they always found sticks or straws that lay in the figure of a cross before her. If she made any mistake at church, and cried amen in a wrong place, they never failed to conclude that she was saying her prayers backwards. There was not a maid in the parish that would take a pin  
20 of her, though she should offer a bag of money with it. She goes by the name of Moll White, and has made the country ring with several imaginary exploits which are palmed upon her. If the dairy-maid does not make her butter come so soon as she would have it, Moll White is at the bottom of the churn. If a horse sweats in the stable, Moll White has been upon his back. If a hare makes an unexpected escape from the hounds, the huntsman curses Moll White. "Nay," says Sir Roger, "I have  
30 send one of his servants to see if Moll White had been out that morning."

This account raised my curiosity so far, that I begged my friend Sir Roger to go with me into her hovel, which stood in a solitary corner under the side of the wood. Upon our first entering, Sir Roger winked to me, and pointed at something that stood behind the door, which

upon looking that way, I found to be an old broom-staff. At the same time he whispered me in the ear to take notice of a tabby cat that sate in the chimney corner, which, as the old knight told me, lay under as bad a report as Moll White herself; for besides that Moll is said often to accompany her in the same shape, the cat is reported to have spoken twice or thrice in her life, and to have played several pranks above the capacity of an ordinary cat.

I was secretly concerned to see human nature in so much wretchedness and disgrace, but at the same time could not forbear smiling to hear Sir Roger, who is a little puzzled about the old woman, advising her as a justice of peace to avoid all communication with the devil, and never to hurt any of her neighbours' cattle. We concluded our visit with a bounty, which was very acceptable.

In our return home, Sir Roger told me, that old Moll had often been brought before him for making children spit pins, and giving maids the nightmare: and that the country people would be tossing her into a pond and trying experiments with her every day, if it was not for him and his chaplain.

I have since found upon enquiry, that Sir Roger was several times staggered with the reports that had been brought him concerning this old woman, and would frequently have bound her over to the county sessions, had not his chaplain with much ado persuaded him to the contrary.

I have been the more particular in this account, because I hear there is scarce a village in England that has not a Moll White in it. When an old woman begins to doat, and grow chargeable to a parish, she is generally turned into a witch, and fills the whole country with extravagant fancies, imaginary distempers, and terrifying dreams. In the mean time, the poor wretch that is the innocent occasion of so many evils begins to be frightened at herself, and

sometimes confesses secret commerces and familiarities that her imagination forms in a delirious old age. This frequently cuts off charity from the greatest objects of compassion, and inspires people with a malevolence towards those poor decrepit parts of our species, in whom human nature is defaced by infirmity and dotage. L.

#### XIV. SIR ROGER'S REFLECTIONS ON THE WIDOW.

No. 118.]

Monday, July 16, 1711.

[Steele.

*Hæret lateri lethalis arundo.*—Virg. *Aen.* iv. 73.

The fatal dart

Sticks to his side, and rankles in his heart.—Dryden.

- 10 THIS agreeable seat is surrounded with so many pleasing walks, which are struck out of a wood, in the midst of which the house stands, that one can hardly ever be weary of rambling from one labyrinth of delight to another. To one used to live in a city the charms of the country are so exquisite, that the mind is lost in a certain transport which raises us above ordinary life, and yet is not strong enough to be inconsistent with tranquillity. This state of mind was I in, ravished with the murmur of waters, the whisper of breezes, the singing of birds;
- 20 and whether I looked up to the heavens, down on the earth, or turned to the prospects around me, still struck with new sense of pleasure; when I found by the voice of my friend, who walked by me, that we had insensibly strolled into the grove sacred to the widow. "This woman," says he, "is of all others the most unintelligible; she either designs to marry, or she does not. What is the most perplexing of all is, that she does not either say to her lovers she has any resolution against that condition of life in general, or that she banishes them; but conscious
- 30 of her own merit she permits their addresses, without fear of an ill consequence, or want of respect, from their

rage or despair. She has that in her aspect, against which it is impossible to offend. A man whose thoughts are, constantly bent upon so agreeable an object, must be excused if the ordinary occurrences in conversation are below his attention. I call her indeed perverse, but, alas! why do I call her so? because her superior merit is such, that I cannot approach her without awe, that my heart is checked by too much esteem: I am angry that her charms are not more accessible, that I am more inclined to worship than salute her. How often have I wished her 10 unhappy, that I might have an opportunity of serving her? And how often troubled in that very imagination, at giving her the pain of being obliged? Well, I have led a miserable life in secret upon her account; but fancy she would have condescended to have some regard for me, if it had not been for that watchful animal her confidant.

"Of all persons under the sun," (continued he, calling me by my name) "be sure to set a mark upon confidants: they are of all people the most impertinent. What is most pleasant to observe in them is, that they assume to 20 themselves the merit of the persons whom they have in their custody. Orestilla is a great fortune, and in wonderful danger of surprises, therefore full of suspicions of the least indifferent thing, particularly careful of new acquaintance, and of growing too familiar with the old. Themista, her favourite woman, is every whit as careful of whom she speaks to, and what she says. Let the ward be a beauty, her confidant shall treat you with an air of distance; let her be a fortune, and she assumes the suspicious behaviour of her friend and patroness. Thus 30 it is that very many of our unmarried women of distinction are to all intents and purposes married, except the consideration of different sexes. They are directly under the conduct of their whisperer; and think they are in a state of freedom, while they can prate with one of these attendants of all men in general, and still avoid the man

they most like. You do not see one heiress in a hundred whose fate does not turn upon this circumstance of choosing a confidant. Thus it is that the lady is addressed to, presented and flattered, only by proxy, in her woman. In my case, how is it possible that—" Sir Roger was proceeding in his harangue, when we heard the voice of one speaking very importunately, and repeating these words, "what, not one smile?" We followed the sound till we came to a close thicket, on the other side of

10 which we saw a young woman sitting as it were in a personated sullenness just over a transparent fountain. Opposite to her stood Mr. William, Sir Roger's master of the game. The knight whispered me, "hist, these are lovers." The huntsman looking earnestly at the shadow of the young maiden in the stream, "Oh thou dear picture, if thou couldst remain there in the absence of that fair creature whom you represent in the water, how willingly could I stand here satisfied for ever, without troubling my dear Betty herself with any mention of her unfortunate

20 William, whom she is angry with! But, alas! when she pleases to be gone, thou wilt also vanish—Yet let me talk to thee while thou dost stay. Tell my dearest Betty thou dost not more depend upon her, than does her William: her absence will make away with me as well as thee. If she offers to remove thee, I will jump into these waves to lay hold on thee; herself, her own dear person, I must never embrace again.—Still do you hear me without one smile—It is too much to bear—" He had no sooner spoke these words, but he made an offer of throwing himself into

30 the water: at which his mistress started up, and at the next instant he jumped across the fountain and met her in an embrace. She half-recovering from her fright, said in the most charming voice imaginable, and with a tone of complaint, "I thought how well you would drown yourself. No, no, you will not drown yourself till you have taken your leave of Susan Holiday." The huntsman, with a tender-

ness that spoke the most passionate love, and with his cheek close to hers, whispered the softest vows of fidelity in her ear, and cried, "Do not, my dear, believe a word Kate Willow says; she is spiteful, and makes stories, because she loves to hear me talk to herself for your sake." "Look you there," quoth Sir Roger, "do you see there, all mischief comes from confidants! But let us not interrupt them; the maid is honest, and the man dare not be otherwise: for he knows I loved her father: I will interpose in this matter, and hasten the wedding. Kate Willow is 10 a witty mischievous wench in the neighbourhood, who was a beauty: and makes me hope I shall see the perverse widow in her condition. She was so flippant with her answers to all the honest fellows that came near her, and so very vain of her beauty, that she has valued herself upon her charms till they are ceased. She therefore now makes it her business to prevent other young women from being more discreet than she was herself: however, the saucy thing said the other day well enough, 'Sir Roger and I must make a match, for we are both despised by 20 those we loved.' The hussy has a great deal of power wherever she comes, and has her share of cunning.

"However, when I reflect upon this woman, I do not know whether in the main I am the worse for having loved her: whenever she is recalled to my imagination my youth returns, and I feel a forgotten warmth in my veins. This affliction in my life has streaked all my conduct with a softness, of which I should otherwise have been incapable. It is perhaps, to this dear image in my heart owing that I am apt to relent, that I easily forgive, and that many 30 desirable things are grown into my temper, which I should not have arrived at by better motives than the thought of being one day hers. I am pretty well satisfied such a passion as I have had is never well cured; and between you and me, I am often apt to imagine it has had some whimsical effect upon my brain: for I frequently find,



that in my most serious discourse I let fall some comical familiarity of speech or odd phrase that makes the company laugh. However, I cannot but allow she is a most excellent woman. When she is in the country I warrant she does not run into dairies, but reads upon the nature of plants: but has a glass-hive, and comes into the garden out of books to see them work, and observe the policies of their commonwealth. She understands every thing. I would give ten pounds to hear her argue with my friend Sir Andrew  
 10 Freeport about trade. No, no, for all she looks so innocent as it were, take my word for it she is no fool." T.

## XV. RURAL MANNERS.

No. 119.]

Tuesday, July 17, 1711.

[Addison.

Urbem quam dicunt Roman, Melibœe, putavi,  
 Stultus ego huic nostrae similem.—Virg. *Ecl.* i. 20.

The city men call Rome, unskilful clown,  
 I thought resembled this our humble town.—Warton.

THE first and most obvious reflections which arise in a man who changes the city for the country, are upon the different manners of the people whom he meets with in those two different scenes of life. By manners I do not mean morals,  
 20 but behaviour and good-breeding, as they shew themselves in the town and in the country.

And here, in the first place, I must observe a very great revolution that has happened in this article of good-breeding. Several obliging deferences, condescensions, and submissions, with many outward forms and ceremonies that accompany them, were first of all brought up among the politer part of mankind, who lived in courts and cities, and distinguished themselves from the rustic part of the species (who on all occasions acted bluntly and naturally) by such a mutual  
 30 complaisance and intercourse of civilities. These forms of

conversation by degrees multiplied and grew troublesome; the modish world found too great a constraint in them, and have therefore thrown most of them aside. Conversation, like the Roman religion, was so encumbered with show and ceremony, that it stood in need of a reformation to retrench its superfluities, and restore it to its natural good sense and beauty. At present, therefore, an unconstrained carriage, and a certain openness of behaviour, are the height of good-breeding. The fashionable world is grown free and easy; our manners sit more loose upon us. Nothing is so modish 10 as an agreeable negligence. In a word, good-breeding shews itself most, where to an ordinary eye it appears the least.

If after this we look on the people of mode in the country, we find in them the manners of the last age. They have no sooner fetched themselves up to the fashion of the polite world, but the town has dropped them and are nearer to the first state of nature, than to those refinements which formerly reigned in the court, and still prevail in the country. One may now know a man that never conversed in the world by his excess of good-breeding. A polite country 20 esquire shall make you as many bows in half an hour, as would serve a courtier for a week. There is infinitely more to do about place and precedency in a meeting of justices' wives, than in an assembly of duchesses.

This rural politeness is very troublesome to a man of my temper, who generally takes the chair that is next me, and walk first or last, in the front or in the rear, as chance directs. I have known my friend Sir Roger's dinner almost cold before the company could adjust the ceremonial, and be prevailed upon to sit down; and have heartily pitied my old 30 friend when I have seen him forced to pick and cull his guests, as they sat at the several parts of his table, that he might drink their healths according to their respective ranks and qualities. Honest Will Wimble, whom I should have thought had been altogether uninfected with ceremony, gives me abundance of trouble in this particular. Though he

has been fishing all the morning, he will not help himself at dinner until I am served. When we are going out of the hall, he runs behind me; and last night, as we were walking in the fields, stopped short at a stile till I came up to it, and upon my making signs to him to get over, told me, with a serious smile, that sure I believed they had no manners in the country.

There has happened another revolution in the point of good-breeding, which relates to the conversation among men  
10 of mode, and which I cannot but look upon as very extraordinary. It was certainly one of the first distinctions of a well-bred man, to express everything that had the most remote appearance of being obscene, in modest terms and distant phrases; whilst the clown, who had no such delicacy of conception or expression, clothed his ideas in those plain homely terms that are the most obvious and natural. This kind of good manners was perhaps carried to an excess, so as to make conversation too stiff, formal, and precise; for which  
20 reason (as hypocrisy in one age is generally succeeded by atheism in another) conversation is in a great measure relapsed into the first extreme; so that at present several of our men of the town, and particularly those who have been polished in France, make use of the most coarse uncivilized words in our language, and utter themselves often in such a manner as a clown would blush to hear.

This infamous piece of good-breeding, which reigns among the coxcombs of the town, has not yet made its way into the country; and as it is impossible for such an irrational way of conversation to last long among a people that makes any  
30 profession of religion, or show of modesty, if the country gentlemen get into it, they will certainly be left in the lurch. Their good-breeding will come too late to them, and they will be thought a parcel of clowns, while they fancy themselves talking together like men of wit and pleasure.

As the two points of good-breeding, which I have hitherto insisted upon, regard behaviour and conversation, there is a

third which turns upon dress. In this too the country are very much behindhand. The rural beaux are not yet got out of the fashion that took place at the time of the Revolution, but ride about the country in red coats and laced hats; while the women in many parts are still trying to outvie one another in the height of their head-dresses.

But a friend of mine, who is now upon the western circuit, having promised to give me an account of the several modes and fashions that prevail in the different parts of the nation through which he passes, I shall defer the enlarging upon 10 this last topic till I have received a letter from him, which I expect every post.

## XVI. INSTINCT IN ANIMALS.

No. 120.]

Wednesday, July 18, 1711.

[Addison.

Equidem credo, quia sit divinitus illis  
Ingenium.—Virg. *Georg.* i. 415.

I deem their breasts inspir'd  
With a divine sagacity.

My friend Sir Roger is very often merry with me upon my passing so much of my time among his poultry. He has caught me twice or thrice looking after a bird's nest, and several times sitting an hour or two together 20 near a hen and chickens. He tells me he believes I am personally acquainted with every fowl about his house; calls such a particular cock my favourite; and frequently complains that his ducks and geese have more of my company than himself.

I must confess I am infinitely delighted with those speculations of nature which are to be made in a country-life; and as my reading has very much lain among books of natural history, I cannot forbear recollecting upon this occasion the several remarks which I have met with in 30 authors, and comparing them with what falls under my

own observation: the arguments for Providence drawn from the natural history of animals being in my opinion demonstrative.

The make of every kind of animal is different from that of every other kind; and yet there is not the least turn in the muscles or twist in the fibres of any one, which does not render them more proper for that particular animal's way of life than any other cast or texture of them would have been.

- 10 It is astonishing to consider the different degrees of care that descend from the parent to the young, so far as is absolutely necessary for the leaving a posterity. Some creatures cast their eggs as chance directs them and think of them no farther; as insects and several kinds of fish. Others, of a nicer frame, find out proper beds to deposit them in, and there leave them; as the serpent, the crocodile, and ostrich; others hatch their eggs and tend their birth, until it is able to shift for itself.

- What can we call the principle which directs every  
20 different kind of bird to observe a particular plan in the structure of its nest, and directs all the same species to work after the same model? It cannot be imitation; for though you hatch a crow under a hen, and never let it see any of the works of its own kind, the nest it makes shall be the same, to the laying of a stick, with all the other nests of the same species. It cannot be reason; for were animals endued with it to as great a degree as man, their buildings would be as different as ours, according to the different conveniencies that they would propose to  
30 themselves.

Is it not remarkable, that the same temper of weather, which raises this genial warmth in animals, should cover the trees with leaves, and the fields with grass, for their security and concealment, and produce such infinite swarms of insects for the support and sustenance of their respective broods?

Is it not wonderful, that the love of the parent should be so violent while it lasts, and that it should last no longer than is necessary for the preservation of the young?

But notwithstanding this natural love in brutes is much more violent and intense than in rational creatures, Providence has taken care that it should be no longer troublesome to the parent than it is useful to the young; for so soon as the wants of the latter cease, the mother withdraws her fondness, and leaves them to provide for themselves; and what is a very remarkable circumstance in this part 10 of instinct, we find that the love of the parent may be lengthened out beyond its usual time, if the preservation of the species requires it; as we may see in birds that drive away their young as soon as they are able to get their livelihood, but continue to feed them if they are tied to the nest, or confined within a cage, or by any other means appear to be out of a condition of supplying their own necessities.

This natural love is not observed in animals to ascend from the young to the parent, which is not at all necessary 20 for the continuance of the species: nor indeed in reasonable creatures does it rise in any proportion, as it spreads itself downward, for in all family affection, we find protection granted and favours bestowed, are greater motives to love and tenderness, than safety, benefits, or life received.

One would wonder to hear sceptical men disputing for the reason of animals, and telling us it is only our pride and prejudices that will not allow them the use of that faculty.

Reason shows itself in all occurrences of life; whereas 30 the Brute makes no discovery of such a talent, but in what immediately regards his own preservation, or the continuance of his species. Animals in their generation are wiser than the sons of men; but their wisdom is confined to a few particulars, and lies in a very narrow compass. Take a brute out of his instinct, and you find him wholly deprived

of understanding. To use an instance that comes often under observation:

With what caution does the hen provide herself a nest in places unfrequented, and free from noise and disturbance! when she has laid her eggs in such a manner that she can cover them, what care does she take in turning them frequently, that all parts may partake of the vital warmth! when she leaves them, to provide for her necessary sustenance, how punctually does she return  
10 before they have time to cool, and become incapable of producing an animal! In the summer you see her giving herself greater freedoms, and quitting her care for above two hours together; but in winter, when the rigour of the season would chill the principles of life, and destroy the young one, she grows more assiduous in her attendance, and stays away but half the time. When the birth approaches, with how much nicety and attention does she help the chick to break its prison! not to take notice of her covering it from the injuries of the weather, providing  
20 it proper nourishment, and teaching it to help itself; nor to mention her forsaking the nest, if after the usual time of reckoning the young one does not make its appearance. A chymical operation could not be followed with greater art or diligence, than is seen in the hatching of a chick; though there are many other birds that shew an infinitely greater sagacity in all the forementioned particulars.

But at the same time the hen, that has all this seeming ingenuity (which is indeed absolutely necessary for the propagation of the species), considered in other respects,  
30 is without the least glimmering of thought or common sense. She mistakes a piece of chalk for an egg, and sits upon it in the same manner. She is insensible of any increase or diminution in the number of those she lays. She does not distinguish between her own and those of another species; and when the birth appears of never so different a bird, will cherish it for her own. In all these



circumstances which do not carry an immediate regard to the subsistence of herself or her species, she is a very idiot.

There is not in my opinion, any thing more mysterious in nature than this instinct in animals, which thus rises above reason, and falls infinitely short of it. It cannot be accounted for by any properties in matter, and at the same time works after so odd a manner, that one cannot think it the faculty of an intellectual being. For my own part, I look upon it as upon the principle of gravitation 10 in bodies, which is not to be explained by any known qualities inherent in the bodies themselves, nor from any laws of mechanism, but, according to the best notions of the greatest philosophers, is an immediate impression from the first Mover, and the divine energy acting in the creatures.

L.

# XVII. INSTINCT IN ANIMALS—Continued.

No. 121.]

Thursday, July 19, 1711.

[Addison.

Jovis omnia plena.—Virg. *Ecl.* iii. 60.

All things are full of Jove.

As I was walking this morning in the great yard that belongs to my friend's country-house, I was wonderfully 20 pleased to see the different workings of instinct in a hen followed by a brood of ducks. The young, upon the sight of a pond, immediately ran into it; while the stepmother, with all imaginable anxiety, hovered about the borders of it, to call them out of an element that appeared to her so dangerous and destructive. As the different principle which acted in these different animals cannot be termed reason, so when we call it instinct, we mean something we have no knowledge of. To me, as I hinted in my last paper,

it seems the immediate direction of Providence, and such an operation of the supreme Being, as that which determines all the portions of matter to their proper centres. A modern philosopher, quoted by Monsieur Bayle in his learned dissertation on the Souls of Brutes, delivers the same opinion, though in a bolder form of words, where he says, *Deus est anima brutorum*, "God himself is the soul of brutes." Who can tell what to call that seeming sagacity in animals, which directs them to such food as is proper  
 10 for them, and makes them naturally avoid whatever is noxious or unwholesome? Dampier, in his Travels, tells us, that when seamen are thrown upon any of the unknown coasts of America they never venture upon the fruit of any tree, how tempting soever it may appear, unless they observe that it is marked with the pecking of birds; but fall on without any fear or apprehension where the birds have been before them.

But notwithstanding animals have nothing like the use of reason, we find in them all the lower parts of our nature,  
 20 the passions and senses in their greatest strength and perfection. And here it is worth our observation, that all beasts and birds of prey are wonderfully subject to anger, malice, revenge, and all the other violent passions that may animate them in search of their proper food; as those that are incapable of defending themselves, or annoying others, or whose safety lies chiefly in their flight, are suspicious, fearful, and apprehensive of every thing they see or hear; whilst others, that are of assistance and use to man have their natures softened with something mild  
 30 and tractable, and by that means are qualified for a domestic life. In this case the passions generally correspond with the make of the body. We do not find the fury of a lion in so weak and defenceless an animal as a lamb; nor the meekness of a lamb in a creature so armed for battle and assault as the lion. In the same manner, we find that particular animals have a more or less exquisite sharpness

and sagacity in those particular senses which most turn to their advantage, and in which their safety and welfare is the most concerned.

Nor must we here omit that great variety of arms with which nature has differently fortified the bodies of several kind of animals, such as claws, hoofs, horns, teeth, and tusks, a tail, a sting, a trunk, or a proboscis. It is likewise observed by naturalists, that it must be some hidden principle, distinct from what we call reason, which instructs animals in the use of these their arms, and teaches them 10 to manage them to the best advantage; because they naturally defend themselves with that part in which their strength lies, before the weapon be formed in it; as is remarkable in lambs, which, though they are bred within doors, and never saw the actions of their own species, push at those who approach them with their foreheads, before the first budding of a horn appears.

I shall add to these general observations an instance, which Mr. Locke has given us of Providence even in the imperfections of a creature which seems the meanest and 20 the most despicable in the whole animal world. "We may," says he, "from the make of an oyster, or cockle, conclude, that it has not so many nor so quick senses as a man, or several other animals: nor if it had, would it, in that state and incapacity of transferring itself from one place to another, be bettered by them. What good would sight and hearing do to a creature, that cannot move itself to or from the object, wherein at a distance it perceives good or evil? and would not quickness of sensation be an inconvenience to an animal that must be still where 30 chance has once placed it, and there receive the afflux of colder or warmer, clean or foul water, as it happens to come to it?"

I shall add to this instance out of Mr. Locke another out of the learned Dr. More, who cites it from Cardan, in relation to another animal which Providence has left

- defective, but at the same time has shown its wisdom in the formation of that organ in which it seems chiefly to have failed. "What is more obvious and ordinary than a mole? and yet what more palpable argument of Providence than she? the members of her body are so exactly fitted to her nature and manner of life: for her dwelling being under ground where nothing is to be seen, nature has so obscurely fitted her with eyes, that naturalists can scarce agree whether she have any sight at all, or no. But for  
10 amends, what she is capable of for her defence and warning of danger, she has very eminently conferred upon her; for she is exceeding quick of hearing. And then her short tail and short legs, but broad fore-feet armed with sharp claws; we see by the event to what purpose they are, she so swiftly working herself under ground, and making her way so fast in the earth as they that behold it cannot but admire it. Her legs therefore are short, that she need dig no more than will serve the mere thickness of her body; and her fore-feet are broad that she may  
20 scoop away much earth at a time; and little or no tail she has, because she courses it not on the ground, like the rat or mouse, of whose kindred she is; but lives under the earth, and is fain to dig herself a dwelling there. And she making her way through so thick an element, which will not yield easily, as the air or the water, it had been dangerous to have drawn so long a train behind her; for her enemy might fall upon her rear, and fetch her out, before she had completed or got full possession of her works."
- 30 I cannot forbear mentioning Mr. Boyle's remark upon this last creature, who I remember somewhere in his works observes, that though the more be not totally blind (as it is commonly thought) she has not sight enough to distinguish particular objects. Her eye is said to have but one humour in it, which is supposed to give her the idea of light but of nothing else, and is so formed that this

idea is probably painful to the animal. Whenever she comes up into broad day she might be in danger of being taken, unless she were thus affected by a light striking upon her eye and immediately warning her to bury herself in her proper element. More sight would be useless to her, as none at all might be fatal.

I have only instanced such animals as seem the most imperfect works of nature; and if Providence shows itself even in the blemishes of these creatures, how much more does it discover itself in the several endowments which it 10 has variously bestowed upon such creatures as are more or less finished and completed in their several faculties, according to the condition of life in which they are posted.

I could wish our Royal Society would compile a body of natural history, the best that could be gathered together from books and observations. If the several writers among them took each his particular species, and gave us a distinct account of its original, birth and education; its policies, hostilities and alliances, with the frame and texture of its inward and outward parts, and particularly those that dis- 20 tinguish it from all other animals, with their peculiar aptitudes for the state of being in which Providence has placed them, it would be one of the best services their studies could do mankind, and not a little redound to the glory of the all-wise Contriver.

It is true, such a natural history, after all the disquisitions of the learned, would be infinitely short and defective. Seas and deserts hide millions of animals from our observation. Innumerable artifices and stratagems are acted in the "howling wilderness" and in the "great deep," that 30 can never come to our knowledge. Besides that there are infinitely more species of creatures which are not to be seen without, nor indeed with the help of the finest glasses, than of such as are bulky enough for the naked eye to take hold of. However, from the consideration of such animals as lie within the compass of our knowledge, we might

easily form a conclusion of the rest, that the same variety of wisdom and goodness runs through the whole creation, and puts every creature in a condition to provide for its safety and subsistence in its proper station.

Tully has given us an admirable sketch of natural history in his second book concerning the Nature of the Gods; and that in a style so raised by metaphors and descriptions, that it lifts the subject above raillery and ridicule, which frequently fall on such nice observations when they pass  
10 through the hands of an ordinary writer. L.

### XVIII. SIR ROGER AT THE ASSIZES.

No. 122.] Friday, July 20, 1711. [Addison.

Comes jucundus in via pro vehiculo est.—Publ. Syr. *Frag.*

An agreeable companion upon the road is as good as a coach.

A MAN's first care should be to avoid the reproaches of his own heart; his next, to escape the censures of the world. If the last interferes with the former, it ought to be entirely neglected; but otherwise there cannot be a greater satisfaction to an honest mind, than to see those approbations which it gives itself, seconded by the applauses of the public. A man is more sure of his conduct, when the  
20 verdict which he passes upon his own behaviour is thus warranted and confirmed by the opinion of all that know him.

My worthy friend Sir Roger is one of those who is not only at peace within himself, but beloved and esteemed by all about him. He receives a suitable tribute for his universal benevolence to mankind, in the returns of affection and goodwill, which are paid him by every one that lives within his neighbourhood. I lately met with two or three odd instances of that general respect which is shewn to  
30 the good old knight. He would needs carry Will Wimble and myself with him to the country assizes. As we were

upon the road Will Wimble joined a couple of plain men who rid before us, and conversed with them for some time; during which my friend Sir Roger acquainted me with their characters.

“The first of them,” says he, “that hath a spaniel by his side, is a yeoman of about a hundred pounds a year, an honest man. He is just within the game act, and qualified to kill an hare or a pheasant. He knocks down a dinner with his gun twice or thrice a week; and by that means lives much cheaper than those who have not 10 so good an estate as himself. He would be a good neighbour if he did not destroy so many partridges. In short, he is a very sensible man; shoots flying; and has been several times foreman of the petty-jury.”

“The other that rides along with him is Tom Touchy, a fellow famous for ‘taking the law’ of everybody. There is not one in the town where he lives that he has not sued at a quarter-sessions. The rogue had once the impudence to go to law with the Widow. His head is full of costs, damages, and ejectments. He plagued a couple 20 of honest gentlemen so long for a trespass in breaking one of his hedges, till he was forced to sell the ground it enclosed to defray the charges of the prosecution. His father left him fourscore pounds a year; but he has cast and been cast so often, that he is not now worth thirty. I suppose he is going upon the old business of the willow-tree.”

As Sir Roger was giving me this account of Tom Touchy, Will Wimble and his two companions stopped short till we came up to them. After having paid their respects to 30 Sir Roger, Will told him that Mr. Touchy and he must appeal to him upon a dispute that arose between them. Will, it seems, had been giving his fellow-traveller an account of his angling one day in such a hole; when Tom Touchy, instead of hearing out his story, told him, that Mr. such a one, if he pleased, might ‘take the law of him’



for fishing in that part of the river. My friend Sir Roger heard them both, upon a round trot, and after having paused some time, told them, with the air of a man who would not give his judgment rashly, 'that much might be said on both sides.' They were neither of them dissatisfied with the knight's determination, because neither of them found himself in the wrong by it. Upon which we made the best of our way to the assizes.

The court was sat before Sir Roger came, but notwithstanding all the justices had taken their places upon the bench, they made room for the old knight at the head of them; who, for his reputation in the country, took occasion to whisper in the judge's ear, that he was glad his lordship had met with so much good weather in his circuit. I was listening to the proceedings of the court with much attention, and infinitely pleased with that great appearance and solemnity which so properly accompanies such a public administration of our laws; when, after about an hour's sitting, I observed, to my great surprise, in the midst of a trial, that my friend Sir Roger was getting up to speak. I was in some pain for him, until I found he had acquitted himself of two or three sentences, with a look of much business and great intrepidity.

Upon his first rising the court was hushed, and a general whisper ran among the country people that Sir Roger 'was up.' The speech he made was so little to the purpose, that I shall not trouble my readers with an account of it; and I believe was not so much designed by the knight himself to inform the court, as to give him a figure in my eye, and keep up his credit in the country.

I was highly delighted, when the court rose, to see the gentlemen of the country gathering about my old friend, and striving who should compliment him most; at the same time that the ordinary people gazed upon him at a distance, not a little admiring his courage, that was not afraid to speak to the judge.

In our return home we met with a very odd accident; which I cannot forbear relating, because it shews how desirous all who know Sir Roger are of giving him marks of their esteem. When we were arrived upon the verge of his estate, we stopped at a little inn to rest ourselves and our horses. The man of the house had, it seems, been formerly a servant in the knight's family; and to do honour to his old master, had some time since, unknown to Sir Roger, put him up in a sign-post before the door; so that the knight's head had hung out upon the road about a 10 week before he himself knew anything of the matter. As soon as Sir Roger was acquainted with it, finding that his servant's indiscretion proceeded wholly from affection and good-will, he only told him that he had made him too high a compliment; and when the fellow seemed to think that could hardly be, added with a more decisive look, that it was too great an honour for any man under a duke; but told him at the same time, that it might be altered with a very few touches, and that he himself would be at the charge of it. Accordingly they got a painter, by the 20 knight's directions, to add a pair of whiskers to the face, and by a little aggravation of the features to change it into the Saracen's Head. I should not have known this story, had not the inn-keeper, upon Sir Roger's alighting, told him in my hearing that his honour's head was brought back last night, with the alterations that he had ordered to be made in it. Upon this my friend, with his usual cheerfulness, related the particulars above-mentioned, and ordered the head to be brought into the room. I could not forbear discovering greater expressions of mirth than 30 ordinary upon the appearance of this monstrous face, under which, notwithstanding it was made to frown and stare in the most extraordinary manner, I could still discover a distant resemblance of my old friend. Sir Roger, upon seeing me laugh, desired me to tell him truly if I thought it possible for people to know him in that disguises. I at

first kept my usual silence; but upon the knight's conjuring me to tell him whether it was not still more like himself than a Saracen, I composed my countenance in the best manner I could, and replied, that "much might be said on both sides."

These several adventures, with the knight's behaviour in them, gave me as pleasant a day as ever I met with in any of my travels.

## XIX. EDUCATION OF COUNTRY SQUIRES.

No. 123.]      Saturday, July 21, 1711.      [Addison.

Doctrina sed vim promovet insitam,

Rectique cultus pectora roborant:

Ut cunq̃ue defecere mores,

Dedecorant bene nata culpæ.—Hor. 4 *Od.* iv. 33.

Yet the best blood by learning is refin'd,

And virtue arms the solid mind;

\* Whilst vice will stain the noblest race,

And the paternal stamp efface.—Oldisworth.

As I was yesterday taking the air with my friend Sir Roger, we were met by a fresh-coloured ruddy young man who rid by us full speed, with a couple of servants  
20 behind him. Upon my inquiry who he was, Sir Roger told me that he was a young gentleman of a considerable estate, who had been educated by a tender mother that lived not many miles from the place where we were. She is a very good lady, says my friend, but took so much care of her son's health, that she has made him good for nothing. She quickly found that reading was bad for his eyes, and that writing made his head ache. He was let loose among the woods as soon as he was able to ride on horseback, or to carry a gun upon his shoulder.  
30 To be brief, I found, by my friend's account of him, that he had got a great stock of health, but nothing else; and

that if it were a man's business only to live, there would not be a more accomplished young fellow in the whole country.

The truth of it is, since my residing in these parts I have seen and heard innumerable instances of young heirs and elder brothers who, either from their own reflecting upon the estates they are born to, and therefore thinking all other accomplishments unnecessary, or from hearing these notions frequently inculcated to them by the flattery of their servants and domestics, or from the same foolish 10 thought prevailing in those who have the care of their education, are of no manner of use but to keep up their families, and transmit their lands and houses in a line to posterity.

This makes me often think on a story I have heard of two friends, which I shall give my reader at large, under feigned names. The moral of it may, I hope, be useful, though there are some circumstances which make it rather appear like a novel, than a true story.

Eudoxus and Leontine began the world with small estates. 20 They were both of them men of good sense and great virtue. They prosecuted their studies together in their earlier years, and entered into such a friendship as lasted to the end of their lives. Eudoxus, at his first setting out in the world, threw himself into a court, where by his natural endowments and his acquired abilities he made his way from one post to another, until at length he had raised a very considerable fortune. Leontine on the contrary sought all opportunities of improving his mind by study, conversation, and travel. He was not only acquainted with all the 30 sciences, but with the most eminent professors of them throughout Europe. He knew perfectly well the interests of its princes, with the customs and fashions of their courts, and could scarce meet with the name of an extraordinary person in the gazette whom he had not either talked to or seen. In short, he had so well mixt and

digested his knowledge of men and books, that he made one of the most accomplished persons of his age. During the whole course of his studies and travels he kept up a punctual correspondence with Eudoxus who often made himself acceptable to the principal men about court by the intelligence which he recieved from Leontine. When they were both turned of forty (an age in which according to Mr. Cowley, "there is no dallying with life") they determined, pursuant to the resolution they had taken in the  
10 beginning of their lives, to retire, and pass the remainder of their days in the country. In order to this, they both of them married much about the same time. Leontine, with his own and his wife's fortune, bought a farm of three hundred a year, which lay within the neighbourhood of his friend Eudoxus, who had purchased an estate of as many thousands. They were both of them fathers about the same time, Eudoxus having a son born to him, and Leontine a daughter; but to the unspeakable grief of the latter, his young wife (in whom all his happiness was wrapt  
20 up) died in a few days after the birth of her daughter. His affliction would have been insupportable, had not he been comforted by the daily visits and conversation of his friend. As they were one day talking together with their usual intimacy, Leontine, considering how incapable he was of giving his daughter a proper education in his own house, and Eudoxus reflecting on the ordinary behaviour of a son who knows himself to be the heir of a great estate, they both agreed upon an exchange of children, namely, that the boy should be bred up with Leontine as  
30 his son, and that the girl should live with Eudoxus as his daughter, until they were each of them arrived at years of discretion. The wife of Eudoxus, knowing that her son could not be so advantageously brought up as under the care of Leontine, and considering at the same time that he would be perpetually under her own eye, was by degrees prevailed upon to fall in with the project. She therefore

took Leonilla, for that was the name of the girl, and educated her as her own daughter. The two friends on each side had wrought themselves to such an habitual tenderness for the children who were under their direction, that each of them had the real passion of a father, where the title was but imaginary. Florio, the name of the young heir that lived with Leontine, though he had all the duty and affection imaginable for his supposed parent, was taught to rejoice at the sight of Eudoxus, who visited his friend very frequently, and was dictated by his natural affection, as 10 well as by the rules of prudence, to make himself esteemed and beloved by Florio. The boy was now old enough to know his supposed father's circumstances, and that therefore he was to make his way in the world by his own industry. This consideration grew stonger in him every day, and produced so good an effect, that he applied himself with more than ordinary attention to the pursuit of every thing which Leontine recommended to him. His natural abilities, which were very good, assisted by the directions of so excellent a counsellor, enabled him to make 20 a quicker progress than ordinary through all the parts of his education. Before he was twenty years of age, having finished his studies and exercises with great applause, he was removed from the university to the inns of court, where there are very few that make themselves considerable proficient in the studies of the place, who know they shall arrive at great estates without them. This was not Florio's case; he found that three hundred a year was but a poor estate for Leontine and himself to live upon, so that he studied without intermission till he gained a very good 30 insight into the constitution and laws of his country.

I should have told my reader, that whilst Florio lived at the house of his foster-father, he was always an acceptable guest in the family of Eudoxus, where he became acquainted with Leonilla from her infancy. His acquaintance with her by degrees grew into love, which in a mind

trained up in all the sentiments of honour and virtue became a very uneasy passion. He despaired of gaining an heiress of so great a fortune, and would rather have died than attempted it by any indirect methods. Leonilla who was a woman of the greatest beauty joined with the greatest modesty, entertained at the same time a secret passion for Florio, but conducted herself with so much prudence that she never gave him the least intimation of it. Florio was now engaged in all those arts and  
10 improvements that are proper to raise a man's private fortune, and give him a figure in his country, but secretly tormented with that passion which burns with the greatest fury in a virtuous and noble heart, when he received a sudden summons from Leontine to repair to him in the country next day. For it seems Eudoxus was so filled with the report of his son's reputation, that he could no longer withhold making himself known to him. The morning after his arrival at the house of his supposed father, Leontine told him that Eudoxus had something of  
20 great importance to communicate to him; upon which the good man embraced him, and wept. Florio was no sooner arrived at the great house that stood in his neighbourhood, but Eudoxus took him by the hand, after the first salutes were over, and conducted him into his closet. He there opened to him the whole secret of his parentage and education, concluding after this manner: "I have no other way left of acknowledging my gratitude to Leontine, than by marrying you to his daughter. He shall not lose the pleasure of being your father by the discovery I have  
30 made to you. Leonilla too shall be still my daughter; her filial piety, though misplaced, has been so exemplary that it deserves the greatest reward I can confer upon it. You shall have the pleasure of seeing a great estate fall to you, which you would have lost the relish of had you known yourself born to it. Continue only to deserve it in the same manner you did before you were possessed of



it. I have left your mother in the next room. Her heart yearns towards you. She is making the same discoveries to Leonilla which I have made to yourself." Florio was so overwhelmed with this profusion of happiness, that he was not able to make a reply, but threw himself down at his father's feet, and amidst a flood of tears, kissed and embraced his knees, asking his blessing, and expressing in dumb show those sentiments of love, duty, and gratitude that were too big for utterance. To conclude, the happy pair were married, and half Eudoxus's 10 estate settled upon them. Leontine and Eudoxus passed the remainder of their lives together; and received in the dutiful and affectionate behaviour of Florio and Leonilla the just recompense, as well as the natural effects of that care which they had bestowed upon them in their education.

L.

## XX. MISCHIEFS OF PARTY SPIRIT.

No. 125.] Tuesday, July 24, 1711. [Addison.

*Ne pueri, ne tanta animis assuescite bella:*

*Neu patriae validas in viscere vertite vires.*—Virg. *Aen.* vi. 832

This thirst of kindred blood, my sons, detest,

Nor turn your force against your country's breast,—Dryden. 20

My worthy friend Sir Roger, when we are talking of the malice of parties, very frequently tells us an accident that happened to him when he was a school-boy, which was at the time when the feuds ran high between the Roundheads and Cavaliers. This worthy knight, being then but a stripling, had occasion to inquire which was the way to St. Anne's Lane, upon which the person whom he spoke to, instead of answering his question, called him a young popish cur, and asked him who had made Anne a saint? the boy, being in some confusion, inquired of the next he 30

met, which was the way to Anne's Lane; but was called a prick-eared cur for his pains, and instead of being shewn the way, was told that she had been a saint before he was born, and would be one after he was hanged. "Upon this," says Sir Roger, "I did not think fit to repeat the former question, but going into every lane of the neighbourhood, asked what they called the name of that lane." By which ingenious artifice he found out the place he inquired after, without giving offence to any party. Sir

10 Roger generally closes this narrative with reflections on the mischief that parties do in the country: how they spoil good neighbourhood, and make honest gentlemen hate one another; besides that they manifestly tend to the prejudice of the land tax, and the destruction of the game.

There cannot a greater judgment befall a country than such a dreadful spirit of division as rends a government into two distinct people, and makes them greater strangers and more averse to one another, than if they were actually two different nations. The effects of such a division are  
20 pernicious to the last degree, not only with regard to those advantages which they give the common enemy, but to those private evils which they produce in the heart of almost every particular person. This influence is very fatal both to men's morals and their understandings; it sinks the virtue of a nation, and not only so, but destroys even common sense.

A furious party spirit, when it rages in its full violence, exerts itself in civil war and bloodshed; and when it is under its greatest restraints naturally breaks out in false-  
30 hood, detraction, calumny, and a partial administration of justice. In a word, it fills a nation with spleen and rancour, and extinguishes all the seeds of good-nature, compassion, and humanity.

Plutarch says very finely, "that a man should not allow himself to hate even his enemies, because," says he, "if you indulge this passion in some occasions, it will rise of

itself in others; if you hate your enemies, you will contract such a vicious habit of mind, as by degrees will break out upon those who are your friends, or those who are indifferent to you." I might here observe how admirable this precept of morality (which derives the malignity of hatred from the passion itself, and not from its object) answers to that great rule which was dictated to the world about an hundred years before this philosopher wrote; but instead of that, I shall only take notice, with a real grief of heart, that the minds of many 10 good men among us appear soured with party-principles, and alienated from one another in such a manner, as seems to me altogether inconsistent with the dictates either of reason or religion. Zeal for a public cause is apt to breed passions in the hearts of virtuous persons, to which the regard of their own private interest would never have betrayed them.

If this party-spirit has so ill an effect on our morals, it has likewise a very great one upon our judgments. We often hear a poor insipid paper or pamphlet cried up, 20 and sometimes a noble piece depreciated, by those who are of a different principle from the author. One who is actuated by this spirit is almost under an incapacity of discerning either real blemishes or beauties. A man of merit in a different principle is like an object seen in two different mediums, that appears crooked or broken, however straight and entire it may be in itself. For this reason there is scarce a person of any figure in England, who does not go by two contrary characters, as opposite to one another as light and darkness. Knowledge and 30 learning suffer in a particular manner from this strange prejudice, which at present prevails amongst all ranks and degrees in the British nation. As men formerly became eminent in learned societies by their parts and acquisitions, they now distinguish themselves by the warmth and violence with which they espouse their respective parties.

—Books are valued upon the like considerations. An abusive scurrilous style passes for satire, and a dull scheme of party-notions is called fine writing.

There is one piece of sophistry practised by both sides, and that is the taking any scandalous story that has ever been whispered or invented of a private man, for a known undoubted truth, and raising suitable speculations upon it. Calumnies that have never been proved, or have been often refuted, are the ordinary postulatus of these infamous scribblers, upon which they proceed as upon first principles granted by all men, though in their hearts they know they are false, or at best very doubtful. When they have laid these foundations of scurrility, it is no wonder that their superstructure is every way answerable to them. If this shameless practice of the present age endures much longer, praise and reproach will cease to be motives of action in good men.

There are certain periods of time in all governments when this inhuman spirit prevails. Italy was long torn in pieces by the Guelfes and Gibellines, and France by those who were for and against the league; but it is very unhappy for a man to be born in such a stormy and tempestuous season. It is the restless ambition of artful men that thus breaks a people into factions, and draws several well-meaning persons to their interest by a specious concern for their country. How many honest minds are filled with uncharitable and barbarous notions, out of their zeal for the public good? What cruelties and outrages would they not commit against men of an adverse party, whom they would honour and esteem, if, instead of considering them as they are represented, they knew them as they are? Thus are persons of the greatest probity seduced into shameful errors and prejudices, made bad men even by that noblest of principles, the "love of their country." I cannot here forbear mentioning the famous Spanish proverb, "If there were neither

fools nor knaves in the world, all people would be of one mind."

For my own part I could heartily wish that all honest men would enter into an association, for the support of one another against the endeavours of those whom they ought to look upon as their common enemies, whatsoever side they may belong to. Were there such an honest body of neutral forces, we should never see the worst of men in great figures of life because they are useful to a party; nor the best unregarded because they are above practising 10 those methods which would be grateful to their faction. We should then single every criminal out of the herd, and hunt him down, however formidable and overgrown he might appear: on the contrary, we should shelter distressed innocence, and defend virtue, however beset with contempt or ridicule, envy or defamation. In short, we should not any longer regard our fellow-subjects as whigs or tories, but should make the man of merit our friend, and the villain our enemy.

C.

## XXI. MISCHIEFS OF PARTY SPIRIT—*Continued.*

No. 126.]      Wednesday, July 25, 1711.      [Addison.

Tros Rutulusve fuat nullo discrimine habebo.—Virg. *Aen.* x.108      20  
Rutulians, Trojans, are the same to me.—Dryden.

IN my yesterday's paper I proposed, that the honest men of all parties should enter into a kind of association for the defence of one another, and the confusion of their common enemies. As it is designed this neutral body should act with a regard to nothing but truth and equity, and divest themselves of the little heats and prepossessions that cleave to parties of all kinds, I have prepared for them the following form of an association, which may express their intentions in the most plain and simple 30 manner.

“ We whose names are hereunto subscribed do solemnly declare, that we do in our consciences believe two and two make four; and that we shall adjudge any man whatsoever to be our enemy who endeavours to persuade us to the contrary. We are likewise ready to maintain with the hazard of all that is near and dear to us, that six is less than seven in all times and all places; and that ten will not be more three years hence than it is at present. We do also firmly declare, that it is our resolution as long as  
10 we live to call black black, and white white. And we shall upon all occasions oppose such persons that upon any day of the year shall call black white, or white black, with the utmost peril of our lives and fortunes.”

Were there such a combination of honest men, who without any regard to places would endeavour to extirpate all such furious zealots as would sacrifice one half of their country to the passion and interest of the other; as also such infamous hypocrites, that are for promoting their own advantage under colour of the public good; with all  
20 the profligate immoral retainers to each side, that have nothing to recommend them but an implicit submission to their leaders; we should soon see that furious party-spirit extinguished, which may in time expose us to the derision and contempt of all the nations about us.

A member of this society that would thus carefully employ himself in making room for merit, by throwing down the worthless and depraved part of mankind from those conspicuous stations of life to which they have been sometimes advanced, and all this without any regard to  
30 his private interest, would be no small benefactor to his country.

I remember to have read in Diodorus Siculus an account of a very active little animal, which I think he calls the ichneumon, that makes it the whole business of his life to break the eggs of the crocodile, which he is always in search after. This instinct is the more remark-

able, because the ichneumon never feeds upon the eggs he has broken, nor any other way finds his account in them. Were it not for the incessant labours of this industrious animal, *Ægypt*, says the historian, would be over-run with crocodiles; for the *Ægyptians* are so far from destroying those pernicious creatures, that they worship them as gods.

If we look into the behaviour of ordinary partizans, we shall find them far from resembling this disinterested animal; and rather acting after the example of the wild 10 Tartars, who are ambitious of destroying a man of the most extraordinary parts and accomplishments, as thinking that upon his decease the same talents whatever post they qualified him for, enter of course into his destroyer.

As in the whole train of my speculations, I have endeavoured as much as I am able to extinguish that pernicious spirit of passion and prejudice, which rages with the same violence in all parties, I am still the more desirous of doing some good in this particular, because I observe that the spirit of party reigns more in the country than 20 in the town. It here contracts a kind of brutality and rustic fierceness, to which men of a politer conversation are wholly strangers. It extends itself even to the return of the bow and the hat; and at the same time that the heads of parties preserve towards one another an outward show of good-breeding, and keep up a perpetual intercourse of civilities, their tools that are dispersed in these outlying parts will not so much as mingle together at a cock-match. This humour fills the country with several periodical meetings of Whig jockies and Tory fox-hunters; not to 30 mention the innumerable curses, frowns, and whispers it produces at a quarter-sessions.

I do not know whether I have observed in any of my former papers that my friends Sir Roger de Coverley and Sir Andrew Freeport are of different principles, the first of them inclined to the landed and the other to the monied



interest. This humour is so moderate in each of them, that it proceeds no farther than to an agreeable raillery, which very often diverts the rest of the club. I find however that the knight is a much stronger Tory in the country than in town, which as he has told me in my ear, is absolutely necessary for the keeping up his interest. In all our journey from London to his house we did not so much as bait at a Whig inn; or if by chance the coachman stopped at a wrong place, one of Sir Roger's  
10 servants would ride up to his master full speed, and whisper to him that the master of the house was against such an one in the last election. This often betrayed us into hard beds and bad cheer; for we were not so inquisitive about the inn as the innkeeper; and provided our landlord's principles were sound, did not take any notice of the staleness of his provisions. This I found still the more inconvenient, because the better the host was, the worse generally were his accommodations; the fellow knowing very well that those who were his friends would take up  
20 with coarse diet and a hard lodging. For these reasons, all the while I was upon the road I dreaded entering into a house of any one that Sir Roger had applauded for an honest man.

Since my stay at Sir Roger's in the country, I daily find more instances of this narrow party-humour. Being upon the bowling-green at a neighbouring market-town the other day, (for that is the place where the gentlemen of one side meet once a week) I observed a stranger among them of a better presence and genteeler behaviour  
30 than ordinary; but was much surprised, that notwithstanding he was a very fair bettor, no body would take him up. But upon inquiry, I found, that he was one who had given a disagreeable vote in a former parliament, for which reason there was not a man upon that bowling-green who would have so much correspondence with him as to win his money of him.

Among other instances of this nature, I must not omit one which concerns myself. Will Wimble was the other day relating several strange stories that he had picked up, nobody knows where, of a certain great man; and upon my staring at him, as one that was surprised to hear such things in the country, which had never been so much as whispered in the town, Will stopped short in the thread of his discourse, and after dinner asked my friend Sir Roger in his ear if he was sure that I was not a fanatic.

10

It gives me a serious concern to see such a spirit of dissension in the country; not only as it destroys virtue and common sense, and renders us in a manner barbarians towards one another, but as it perpetuates our animosities, widens our breaches, and transmits our present passions and prejudices to our posterity. For my own part, I am sometimes afraid that I discover the seeds of a civil war in these our divisions; and therefore cannot but bewail, as in their first principles, the miseries and calamities of our children.

C. 20

## XXII. SIR ROGER AND THE GIPSIES.

No. 130.]

Monday, July 30, 1711.

[Addison.

*Semperque recentes**Convectare juvat praedas, et vivere rapto.**Virg. Æn. vii. 748.*

A plundering race, still eager to invade,

On spoil they live, and make of theft a trade.

As I was yesterday riding out in the fields with my friend Sir Roger, we saw at a little distance from us a troop of gipsies. Upon the first discovery of them, my friend was in some doubt whether he should not exert the justice of

peace upon such a band of lawless vagrants: but not having his clerk with him, who is a necessary counsellor on these occasions, and fearing that his poultry might fare the worse for it, he let the thought drop: but at the same time gave me a particular account of the mischiefs they do in the country, in stealing people's goods, and spoiling their servants. "If a stray piece of linen hangs upon an hedge," says Sir Roger, "they are sure to have it; if a hog loses his way in the fields, it is ten to one but he becomes their  
10 prey: our geese cannot live in peace for them. If a man prosecutes them with severity, his hen-roost is sure to pay for it. They generally straggle into these parts about this time of the year; and set the heads of our servant-maids so agog for husbands, that we do not expect to have any business done as it should be, whilst they are in the country. I have an honest dairy-maid who crosses their hands with a piece of silver every summer, and never fails being promised the handsomest young fellow in the parish for her pains. Your friend the butler has been fool enough to be  
20 seduced by them; and though he is sure to lose a knife, a fork, or a spoon every time his fortune is told him, generally shuts himself up in the pantry with an old gipsy for about half an hour once in a twelve month. Sweethearts are the things they live upon, which they bestow very plentifully upon all those that apply themselves to them.

Sir Roger, observing that I listened with great attention to his account of a people who were so entirely new to me, told me, that if I would, they should tell us our fortunes. As I was very well pleased with the knight's proposal, we  
30 rid up and communicated our hands to them. A Cassandra of the crew, after having examined my lines very diligently, told me that I loved a pretty maid in a corner, that I was a good woman's man, with some other particulars, which I do not think proper to relate. My friend Sir Roger alighted from his horse, and exposing his palm to two or three that stood by him, they crumpled it into all shapes,

and diligently scanned every wrinkle that could be made in it; when one of them, who was older and more sunburnt than the rest, told him that he had a widow in his line of life. Upon which the knight cried, "Go, go, you are an idle baggage"; and at the same time smiled upon me. The gipsy, finding he was not displeased in his heart, told him, after a farther inquiry into his hand, that his true love was constant, and that she should dream of him to-night. My old friend cried Pish, and bid her go on. The gipsy told him that he was a bachelor, but would not 10 be so long; and that he was dearer to somebody than he thought. The knight still repeated, "She was an idle baggage," and bid her go on. "Ah, master," says the gipsy, "that roguish leer of yours makes a pretty woman's heart ache; you have not that simper about the mouth for nothing." The uncouth gibberish with which all this was uttered, like the darkness of an oracle, made us the more attentive to it. To be short, the knight left the money with her that he had crossed her hand with, and got up again on his horse. 20

As we were riding away, Sir Roger told me, that he knew several sensible people who believed these gipsies now and then foretold very strange things; and for half an hour together appeared more jocund than ordinary. In the height of this good humour, meeting a common beggar upon the road, who was no conjurer, as he went to relieve him, he found his pocket was picked: that being a kind of palmistry at which this race of vermin are very dexterous.

I might here entertain my reader with historical remarks on this idle, profligate people, who infest all the countries of 30 Europe, and live in the midst of governments in a kind of commonwealth by themselves. But, instead of entering into observations of this nature, I shall fill the remaining part of my paper with a story which is still fresh in Holland, and was printed in one of our monthly accounts about twenty years ago. "As the trekschuyt, or hackney-boat, which

carries passengers from Leyden to Amsterdam, was putting off, a boy running along the side of the canal desired to be taken in; which the master of the boat refused because the lad had not quite money enough to pay the usual fare. An eminent merchant being pleased with the looks of the boy, and secretly touched with compassion towards him, paid the money for him, and ordered him to be taken on board. Upon talking with him afterwards, he found that he could speak readily in three or four languages, and  
10 learned, upon further examination, that he had been stolen away when he was a child by a gipsy, and had rambled ever since with a gang of those strollers up and down several parts of Europe. It happened that the merchant, whose heart seems to have inclined towards the boy by a secret kind of instinct, had himself lost a child some years before. The parents, after a long search for him, gave him for drowned in one of the canals with which that country abounds; and the mother was so afflicted at the loss of a fine boy, who was her only son, that she died  
20 for grief of it. Upon laying together all particulars, and examining the several moles and marks by which the mother used to describe the child when he was first missing, the boy proved to be the son of the merchant, whose heart had so unaccountably melted at the sight of him. The lad was very well pleased to find a father who was so rich, and likely to leave him a good estate: the father, on the other hand, was not a little delighted to see a son return to him, whom he had given for lost, with such a strength of constitution, sharpness of understanding,  
30 and skill in languages." Here the printed story leaves off; but if I may give credit to reports, our linguist having received such extraordinary rudiments towards a good education, was afterwards trained up in everything that becomes a gentleman; wearing off, by little and little, all the vicious habits and practices that he had been used to in the course of his peregrinations. Nay, it is said, that

he has since been employed in foreign courts upon national business, with great reputation to himself, and honour to those who sent him, and that he has visited several countries as a public minister, in which he formerly wandered as a gipsy.

### XXIII. THE COUNTRY'S OPINION OF THE SPECTATOR.

No. 131.] Tuesday, July 31, 1711. [Addison.

*Ipsae rursum concedite sylvae.*—Virg. *Ecl.* x. 63.

Once more, ye woods, adieu.

It is usual for a man who loves country sports to preserve the game in his own grounds, and divert himself upon those that belong to his neighbour. My friend Sir Roger generally goes two or three miles from his house, and gets into the frontiers of his estate, before he beats about in search of a hare or partridge, on purpose to spare his own fields, where he is always sure of finding diversion, when the worst comes to the worst. By this means the breed about his house has time to increase and multiply, besides that the sport is the more agreeable where the game is the harder to come at, and does not lie so thick as to produce any perplexity or confusion in the pursuit. For these reasons the country gentleman, like the fox, seldom preys 10 near his own home. 20

In the same manner I have made a month's excursion out of the town, which is the great field of game for sportsmen of my species, to try my fortune in the country, where I have started several subjects, and hunted them down, with some pleasure to myself, and I hope to others. I am here forced to use a great deal of diligence before I can spring anything to my mind, whereas in town, whilst I am following one character, it is ten to one but I am crossed in my way by another, and put up such a 30 variety of odd creatures in both sexes, that they foil

the scent of one another, and puzzle the chase. My greatest difficulty in the country is to find sport, and in town to choose it. In the mean time, as I have given a whole month's rest to the cities of London and Westminster, I promise myself abundance of new game upon my return thither.

It is indeed high time for me to leave the country, since I find the whole neighbourhood begin to grow very inquisitive after my name and character; my love of  
10 solitude, taciturnity, and particular way of life, having raised a great curiosity in all these parts.

The notions which have been framed of me are various; some look upon me as very proud, some as very modest, and some as very melancholy. Will Wimble, as my friend the butler tells me, observing me very much alone, and extremely silent when I am in company, is afraid I have killed a man. The country people seem to suspect me for a conjurer; and some of them hearing of the visit which I made to Moll White, will needs have it that Sir  
20 Roger has brought down a cunning man with him, to cure the old woman, and free the country from her charms. So that the character which I go under in part of the neighbourhood, is what they here call a White Witch.

A justice of peace, who lives about five miles off, and is not of Sir Roger's party, has it seems said twice or thrice at his table, that he wishes Sir Roger does not harbour a Jesuit in his house, and that he thinks the gentlemen of the country would do very well to make me  
30 give some account of myself.

On the other side, some of Sir Roger's friends are afraid the old knight is imposed upon by a designing fellow, and as they have heard that he converses very promiscuously when he is in town, do not know but he has brought down with him some discarded Whig, that is sullen, and says nothing because he is out of place.



Such is the variety of opinions which are here entertained of me, so that I pass among some for a disaffected person, and among others for a popish priest; among some for a wizard, and among others for a murderer; and all this for no other reason that I can imagine, but because I do not hoot, and halloo, and make a noise. It is true, my friend Sir Roger tells them,—“That it is my way,” and that I am only a philosopher; but this will not satisfy them. They think there is more in me than he discovers, and that I do not hold my 10 tongue for nothing.

For these and other reasons I shall set out for London to-morrow, having found by experience that the country is not a place for a person of my temper, who does not love jollity, and what they call good neighbourhood. A man that is out of humour when an unexpected guest breaks in upon him, and does not care for sacrificing an afternoon to every chance-comer, that will be the master of his own time, and the pursuer of his own inclinations, makes but a very unsociable figure in this kind of life. 20 I shall therefore retire into the town, if I may make use of that phrase, and get into the crowd again as fast as I can, in order to be alone. I can there raise what speculations I please upon others without being observed myself, and at the same time enjoy all the advantages of company, with all the privileges of solitude. In the meanwhile, to finish the month, and conclude these my rural speculations, I shall here insert a letter from my friend Will Honeycomb, who has not lived a month for these forty years out of the smoke of London, and rallies me 30 after his way upon my country life.

“DEAR SPEC,

“I suppose this letter will find thee picking of daisies, or smelling to a lock of hay, or passing away thy time in some innocent country diversion of the like nature. I have however orders from the club to summon thee up

to town, being all of us cursedly afraid thou wilt not be able to relish our company, after thy conversations with Moll White, and Will Wimble. Pr'ythee do not send us up any more stories of a cock and a bull, nor frighten the town with spirits and witches. Thy speculations begin to smell confoundedly of woods and meadows. If thou dost not come up quickly, we shall conclude that thou art in love with one of Sir Roger's dairy-maids. Service to the knight. Sir Andrew is grown the cock of the club since  
 10 he left us, and if he does not return quickly will make every mother's son of us commonwealth's-men.

Dear Spec,

thine eternally,

C.

WILL HONEYCOMB."

#### XXIV. A SCENE IN A STAGE COACH.

No. 132.]

Wednesday, August 1, 1711.

[Steele.

*Qui, aut tempus quid postulet non videt, aut plura loquitur, aut se ostentat, aut eorum quibuscum est rationem non habet, is ineptus esse dicitur.—Tull.*

20 That man may be called impertinent, who considers not the circumstances of time, or ingrosses the conversation, or makes himself the subject of his discourse, or pays no regard to the company he is in.

HAVING notified to my good friend Sir Roger that I should set out for London the next day, his horses were ready at the appointed hour in the evening; and attended by one of his grooms, I arrived at the county-town at twilight, in order to be ready for the stage-coach the day following. As soon as we arrived at the inn, the servant who waited upon me, inquired of the chamberlain in my hearing what company he had for the coach? The fellow answered,  
 30 "Mrs. Betty Arable the great fortune, and the widow her mother; a recruiting officer (who took a place because

they were to go) young squire Quickset her cousin (that her mother wished her to be married to); Ephraim the quaker, her guardian; and a gentleman that had studied himself dumb from Sir Roger de Coverley's." I observed by what he said of myself, that according to his office he dealt much in intelligence; and doubted not but there was some foundation for his reports of the rest of the company, as well as for the whimsical account he gave of me. The next morning at day-break we were all called; and I who know my own natural shyness, and endeavour to be as little liable to be disputed with as possible, dressed immediately, that I might make no one wait. The first preparation for our setting out was, that the captain's half pike was placed near the coachman, and a drum behind the coach. In the mean time the drummer, the captain's equipage, was very loud, "that none of the captain's things should be placed so as to be spoiled;" upon which his cloke-bag was fixed in the seat of the coach; and the captain himself, according to a frequent though invidious behaviour of military men, ordered his man to look sharp, that none but one of the ladies should have the place he had taken fronting to the coach-box.

We were in some little time fixed in our seats, and sat with that dislike which people not too good-natured usually conceive of each other at first sight. The coach jumbled us insensibly into some sort of familiarity: and we had not moved above two miles, when the widow asked the captain what success he had in his recruiting? The officer, with a frankness he believed very graceful, told her, "that indeed he had but very little luck, and had suffered much by desertion, therefore should be glad to end his warfare in the service of her or her fair daughter. In a word," continued he, "I am a soldier, and to be plain is my character: you see me, madam, young, sound, and impudent; take me yourself, widow, or give me to her, I will be wholly at your disposal. I am a

soldier of fortune, ha!"—This was followed by a vain laugh of his own, and a deep silence of all the rest of the company. I had nothing left for it but to fall fast asleep, which I did with all speed.—"come," said he, "resolve upon it, we will make a wedding at the next town: we will wake this pleasant companion who has fallen asleep, to be the brideman; and," giving the quaker a clap on the knee, he concluded, "This sly saint, who, I will warrant, understands what is what as well as you or I, widow, shall give the bride as father." The quaker, who happened to be a man of smartness, answered, "Friend, I take it in good part that thou hast given me the authority of a father over this comely and virtuous child; and I must assure thee, that if I have the giving her, I shall not bestow her on thee. Thy mirth, friend, savoureth of folly: thou art a person of a light mind, thy drum is a type of thee, it soundeth because it is empty. Verily, it is not from thy fulness, but thy emptiness that thou hast spoken this day. Friend, friend, we have hired this coach  
20 in partnership with thee, to carry us to the great city; we cannot go any other way. This worthy mother must hear thee if thou wilt needs utter thy follies; we cannot help it, friend, I say: if thou wilt, we must hear thee; but if thou wert a man of understanding, thou wouldst not take advantage of thy courageous countenance to abash us children of peace.—Thou art, thou sayest, a soldier; give quarter to us, who cannot resist thee. Why didst thou flee at our friend who feigned himself asleep? He said nothing; but how dost thou know what he  
30 containeth? If thou speakest improper things in the hearing of this virtuous young virgin, consider it is an outrage against a distressed person that cannot get from thee: to speak indiscreetly what we are obliged to hear, by being hasped up with thee in this public vehicle, is in some degree assaulting on the high road."

Here Ephraim paused, and the captain with a happy

and uncommon impudence (which can be convicted and support itself at the same time) cries, "Faith, friend, I thank thee; I should have been a little impertinent if thou hadst not reprimanded me. Come, thou art, I see, a smoky old fellow, and I will be very orderly the ensuing part of the journey. I was going to give myself airs, but, ladies, I beg pardon."

The captain was so little out of humour, and our company was so far from being soured by this little ruffle, that Ephraim and he took a particular delight in being 10 agreeable to each other for the future; and assumed their different provinces in the conduct of the company. Our reckonings, apartments, and accommodation, fell under Ephraim; and the captain looked to all disputes on the road, as the good behaviour of our coachman, and the right we had of taking place, as going to London, of all vehicles coming from thence. The occurrences we met with were ordinary, and very little happened which could entertain by the relation of them: but when I considered the company we were in, I took it for no small good-fortune, 20 that the whole journey was not spent in impertinences, which to one part of us might be an entertainment, to the other a suffering. What therefore Ephraim said when we were almost arrived at London, had to me an air not only of good understanding, but good breeding. Upon the young lady's expressing her satisfaction in the journey, and declaring how delightful it had been to her, Ephraim declared himself as follows: "There is no ordinary part of human life, which expresseth so much a good mind, and a right inward man, as his behaviour upon 30 meeting with strangers, especially such as may seem the most unsuitable companions to him: such a man, when he falleth in the way with persons of simplicity and innocence, however knowing he may be in the ways of men, will not vaunt himself thereof, but will the rather hide his superiority to them, that he may not be painful unto

them. My good friend," continued he, turning to the officer, "thee and I are to part by and by, and peradventure we may never meet again: but be advised by a plain man; modes and apparels are but trifles to the real man, therefore do not think such a man as thyself terrible for thy garb, nor such a one as me contemptible for mine. When two such as thee and I meet, with affections as we ought to have towards each other, thou shouldst rejoice to see my peaceable demeanour, and I should be glad to see  
 10 thy strength and ability to protect me in it." T.

## XXV. SIR ROGER IN TOWN.

No. 269.] Tuesday, January 8, 1711-12. [Addison.

*Ævo rarissima nostro*

*Simplicitas.*—Ovid, *Ars Am.* i. 241.

Most rare is now our old Simplicity.—Dryden.

I WAS this morning surprised with a great knocking at the door, when my landlady's daughter came up to me and told me that there was a man below desired to speak with me. Upon my asking her who it was, she told me it was a very grave elderly person, but that she did not know his name. I immediately went down to him, and found him  
 20 to be the coachman of my worthy friend, Sir Roger de Coverley. He told me that his master came to town last night, and would be glad to take a turn with me in Gray's-inn walks. As I was wondering with myself what had brought Sir Roger to town, not having lately received any letter from him, he told me that his master was come up to get a sight of Prince Eugene, and that he desired I would immediately meet him.

I was not a little pleased with the curiosity of the old knight, though I did not much wonder at it, having heard  
 30 him say more than once in private discourse, that he

looked upon Prince Eugenio (for so the knight always calls him) to be a greater man than Scanderbeg.

I was no sooner come into Gray's-inn walks, but I heard my friend upon the terrace hemming twice or thrice to himself with great vigour, for he loves to clear his pipes in good air (to make use of his own phrase), and is not a little pleased with any one who takes notice of the strength which he still exerts in his morning hems.

I was touched with a secret joy at the sight of the good old man, who before he saw me was engaged in conversation with a beggar-man that had asked an alms of him. I could hear my friend chide him for not finding out some work; but at the same time saw him put his hand in his pocket and give him sixpence.

Our salutations were very hearty on both sides, consisting of many kind shakes of the hand, and several affectionate looks which we cast upon one another. After which the knight told me my good friend his chaplain was very well, and much at my service, and that the Sunday before he had made a most incomparable sermon out of Dr. Barrow. 20  
“I have left,” says he, “all my affairs in his hands, and being willing to lay an obligation upon him, have deposited with him thirty marks, to be distributed among his poor parishioners.”

He then proceeded to acquaint me with the welfare of Will Wimble. Upon which he put his hand into his fob and presented me in his name with a tobacco-stopper, telling me that Will had been busy all the beginning of the winter in turning great quantities of them; and that he made a present of one to every gentleman in the country 30 who has good principles, and smokes. He added, that poor Will was at present under great tribulation, for that Tom Touchy had taken the law of him for cutting some hazel sticks out of one of his hedges.

Among other pieces of news which the knight brought from his country-seat, he informed me that Moll White



was dead, and that about a month after her death the wind was so very high, that it blew down the end of one of his barns. "But for my own part," says Sir Roger, "I do not think that the old woman had any hand in it."

He afterwards fell into an account of the diversions which had passed in his house during the holidays; for Sir Roger, after the laudable custom of his ancestors, always keeps open house at Christmas. I learned from him that he had killed eight fat hogs for this season, that he had  
10 dealt about his chinees very liberally amongst his neighbours, and that in particular he had sent a string of hogs-puddings with a pack of cards to every poor family in the parish. "I have often thought," says Sir Roger, "it happens very well that Christmas should fall out in the middle of winter. It is the most dead uncomfortable time of the year, when the poor people would suffer very much from their poverty and cold, if they had not good cheer, warm fires, and Christmas gambols to support them. I love to  
20 rejoice their poor hearts at this season, and to see the whole village merry in my great hall. I allow a double quantity of malt to my small-beer, and set it a running for twelve days to every one that calls for it. I have always a piece of cold beef and a mince-pie upon the table, and am wonderfully pleased to see my tenants pass away a whole evening in playing their innocent tricks, and smutting one another. Our friend Will Wimble is as merry as any of them, and shews a thousand roguish tricks upon these occasions."

I was very much delighted with the reflection of my  
30 old friend, which carried so much goodness in it. He then launched out into the praise of the late act of parliament for securing the church of England, and told me with great satisfaction, that he believed it already began to take effect, for that a rigid dissenter who chanced to dine at his house on Christmas-day, had been observed to eat very plentifully of his plum-porridge.

After having dispatched all our country matters, Sir Roger made several inquiries concerning the club, and particularly of his old antagonist, Sir Andrew Freeport. He asked me with a kind of smile, whether Sir Andrew had not taken advantage of his absence, to vent among them some of his republican doctrines: but soon after gathering up his countenance into a more than ordinary seriousness, "Tell me truly," says he, "don't you think Sir Andrew had a hand in the pope's procession?"—But without giving me time to answer him, "Well, well," says 10 he, "I know you are a wary man, and do not care to talk of public matters."

The knight then asked me, if I had seen Prince Eugenio, and made me promise to get him a stand in some convenient place where he might have a full sight of that extraordinary man, whose presence did so much honour to the British nation. He dwelt very long on the praises of this great general, and I found that since I was with him in the country he had drawn many observations together out of his reading in Baker's Chronicle, and other authors, who 20 always lie in his hall window, which very much redound to the honour of this prince.

Having passed away the greatest part of the morning in hearing the knight's reflections, which were partly private and partly political, he asked me if I would smoke a pipe with him over a dish of coffee at Squire's? As I love the old man, I take delight in complying with every thing that is agreeable to him, and accordingly waited on him to the coffee-house, where his venerable figure drew upon us the eyes of the whole room. He had no sooner seated 30 himself at the upper end of the high table, but he called for a clean pipe, a paper of tobacco, a dish of coffee, a wax candle, and the Supplement, with such an air of cheerfulness and good-humour, that all the boys in the coffee-room (who seemed to take pleasure in serving him) were at once employed on his several errands, insomuch that nobody

else could come at a dish of tea, until the knight had got all his conveniencies about him. L.

## XXVI. VISIT TO WESTMINSTER ABBEY.

No. 329.] Tuesday, March 18, 1712. [Addison.

*Ire tamen restat, Numa quo devenit et Ancus.*

*Hor. Epod. vi. 27.*

With Ancus, and with Numa, kings of Rome,  
We must descend into the silent tomb.

My friend Sir Roger de Coverley told me the other night, that he had been reading my paper upon Westminster Abbey, in which, says he, there are a great many ingenious fancies. He told me at the same time, that he observed  
10 I had promised another paper upon the tombs, and that he should be glad to go and see them with me, not having visited them since he had read history. I could not imagine how this came into the knight's head, till I recollected that he had been very busy all last summer upon Baker's Chronicle, which he has quoted several times in his disputes with Sir Andrew Freeport, since his last coming to town. Accordingly I promised to call upon him the next morning, that we might go together to the Abbey.

I found the knight under his butler's hands, who always  
20 shaves him. He was no sooner dressed, than he called for a glass of the widow Truby's water, which he told me he always drank before he went abroad. He recommended to me a dram of it at the same time, with so much heartiness, that I could not forbear drinking it. As soon as I had got it down, I found it very unpalatable; upon which the knight, observing that I had made several wry faces, told me that he knew I should not like it at first, but that it was the best thing in the world against the stone or gravel.

I could have wished, indeed, that he had acquainted me with the virtues of it sooner; but it was too late to complain, and I knew what he had done was out of good-will. Sir Roger told me further, that he looked upon it to be very good for a man whilst he staid in town, to keep off infection, and that he got together a quantity of it upon the first news of the sickness being at Dantzick: when of a sudden turning short to one of his servants, who stood behind him, he bid him call a hackney coach, and take care it was an elderly man that drove it. 10

He then resumed his discourse upon Mrs. Truby's water, telling me that the widow Truby was one who did more good than all the doctors and apothecaries in the country; that she distilled every poppy that grew within five miles of her; that she distributed her water gratis among all sorts of people; to which the knight added that she had a very great jointure, and that the whole country would fain have it a match between him and her; "and truly," says Sir Roger, "if I had not been engaged, perhaps I could not have done better." 20

His discourse was broken off by his man's telling him he had called a coach. Upon our going to it, after having cast his eye upon the wheels, he asked the coachman if his axle-tree was good; upon the fellow's telling him he would warrant it, the knight turned to me, told me he looked like an honest man, and went in without further ceremony.

We had not gone far, when Sir Roger, popping out his head, called the coachman down from his box, and upon presenting himself at the window, asked him if he smoked. 30 As I was considering what this would end in, he bid him stop by the way at any good tobacconist's, and take in a roll of their best Virginia. Nothing material happened in the remaining part of our journey, till we were set down at the west end of the Abbey.

As we went up the body of the church, the knight pointed

at the trophies upon one of the new monuments, and cried out, "A brave man, I warrant him!" Passing afterwards by Sir Cloudsley Shovel, he flung his hand that way, and cried, "Sir Cloudsley Shovel! a very gallant man!" As we stood before Busby's tomb, the knight uttered himself again after the same manner: "Dr. Busby! a great man! he whipped my grandfather; a very great man! I should have gone to him myself, if I had not been a blockhead; a very great man!"

- 10 We were immediately conducted into the little chapel on the right hand. Sir Roger, planting himself at our historian's elbow, was very attentive to everything he said, particularly to the account he gave us of the lord who had cut off the king of Morocco's head. Among several other figures, he was very well pleased to see the statesman Cecil upon his knees; and, concluding them all to be great men, was conducted to the figure which represents that martyr to good housewifery, who died by the prick of a needle. Upon our interpreter's telling us  
20 that she was a maid of honour to Queen Elizabeth, the knight was very inquisitive into her name and family; and after having regarded her finger for some time, "I wonder," says he, "that Sir Richard Baker has said nothing of her in his Chronicle."

- We were then conveyed to the two coronation chairs, where my old friend, after having heard that the stone underneath the most ancient of them, which was brought from Scotland, was called Jacob's Pillow, sat himself down in the chair; and looking like the figure of an old Gothic  
30 king, asked our interpreter what authority they had to say that Jacob had ever been in Scotland? The fellow, instead of returning him an answer, told him, that he hoped his honour would pay his forfeit. I could observe Sir Roger a little ruffled upon being thus trepanned; but our guide not insisting upon his demand, the knight soon recovered his good humour, and whispered in my ear,

that if Will Wimble were with us, and saw those two chairs, it would go hard but he would get a tobacco-stopper out of one or t'other of them.

Sir Roger, in the next place, laid his hand upon Edward the Third's sword, and leaning upon the pommel of it, gave us the whole history of the Black Prince; concluding, that, in Sir Richard Baker's opinion, Edward the Third was one of the greatest princes that ever sat upon the English throne.

We were then shewn Edward the Confessor's tomb; 10 upon which Sir Roger acquainted us, that he was the first who touched for the evil: and afterwards Henry the Fourth's; upon which he shook his head, and told us, there was fine reading in the casualties of that reign.

Our conductor then pointed to that monument where there is the figure of one of our English kings without an head; and upon giving us to know that the head, which was of beaten silver, had been stolen away several years since; "Some Whig, I'll warrant you," says Sir Roger "you ought to lock up your kings better; they will carry 20 off the body too, if you don't take care."

The glorious names of Henry the Fifth and Queen Elizabeth gave the knight great opportunities of shining, and of doing justice to Sir Richard Baker, who, as our knight observed with some surprise, had a great many kings in him, whose monuments he had not seen in the Abbey.

For my own part I could not but be pleased to see the knight show such an honest passion for the glory of his country, and such a respectful gratitude to the memory of its princes.

30

I must not omit, that the benevolence of my good old friend, which flows out towards every one he converses with, made him very kind to our interpreter, whom he looked upon as an extraordinary man; for which reason he shook him by the hand at parting, telling him, that he should be very glad to see him at his lodgings in Norfolk-

buildings, and talk over these matters with him more at leisure.

## XXVII. SIR ROGER AT THE THEATRE.

No. 335.] Tuesday, March 25, 1711-12. [Addison.

*Respicere exemplar vita morumque jubeto*

*Doctum imitatore, et veras hinc ducere voces.*

*Hor. Ars. Poet. 327.*

Keep Nature's great original in view,

And thence the living images pursue.—Francis.

My friend Sir Roger de Coverley, when we last met together at the club, told me, that he had a great mind to see the new tragedy with me, assuring me at the same  
 10 time, that he had not been at a play these twenty years. "The last I saw," said Sir Roger, "was The Committee, which I should not have gone to neither, had not I been told beforehand that it was a good Church of England comedy." He then proceeded to inquire of me who this Distressed Mother was; and upon hearing that she was Hector's widow, he told me, that her husband was a brave man, and that when he was a school-boy, he had read his life at the end of the dictionary. My friend asked me, in the next place, if there would not be some danger in  
 20 coming home late, in case the Mohocks should be abroad. "I assure you," says he, "I thought I had fallen into their hands last night; for I observed two or three lusty black men that followed me half way up Fleet Street, and mended their pace behind me, in proportion as I put on to get away from them. You must know," continued the knight with a smile, "I fancied they had a mind to hunt me; for I remember an honest gentleman in my neighbourhood, who was served such a trick in King Charles the Second's time; for which reason he has not ventured  
 30 himself in town ever since. I might have shewn them



very good sport, had this been their design; for as I am an old fox-hunter, I should have turned and dodged, and have played them a thousand tricks they had never seen in their lives before." Sir Roger added, that "if these gentlemen had any such intention, they did not succeed very well in it; for I threw them out," says he, "at the end of Norfolk Street, where I doubled the corner, and got shelter in my lodgings before they could imagine what was become of me. However," says the knight, "if Captain Sentry will make one with us to-morrow night, and you 10 will both of you call upon me about four o'clock, that we may be at the house before it is full, I will have my own coach in readiness to attend you, for John tells me he has got the fore-wheels mended."

The captain, who did not fail to meet me there at the appointed hour, bid Sir Roger fear nothing, for that he had put on the same sword which he made use of at the battle of Steenkirk. Sir Roger's servants, and among the rest my old friend the butler, had, I found, provided themselves with good oaken plants, to attend their master upon 20 this occasion. When we had placed him in his coach, with myself at his left hand, the captain before him, and his butler at the head of his footmen in the rear, we convoyed him in safety to the play-house; where, after having marched up the entry in good order, the captain and I went in with him, and seated him betwixt us in the pit. As soon as the house was full, and the candles lighted, my old friend stood up and looked about him with that pleasure, which a mind seasoned with humanity naturally feels 30 in itself, at the sight of a multitude of people who seem pleased with one another, and partake of the same common entertainment. I could not but fancy to myself, as the old man stood up in the middle of the pit, that he made a very proper centre to a tragic audience. Upon the entering of Pyrrhus, the knight told me, that he did not believe the King of France himself had a better strut. I

was, indeed, very attentive to my old friend's remarks, because I looked upon them as a piece of natural criticism, and was well pleased to hear him at the conclusion of almost every scene, telling me that he could not imagine how the play would end. One while he appeared much concerned for Andromache; and a little while after as much for Hermione: and was extremely puzzled to think what would become of Pyrrhus.

When Sir Roger saw Andromache's obstinate refusal to  
 10 her lover's importunities, he whispered me in the ear, that he was sure she would never have him; to which he added, with a more than ordinary vehemence, "You can't imagine, sir, what it is to have to do with a widow." Upon Pyrrhus his threatening afterwards to leave her, the knight shook his head, and muttered to himself, "Ay, do if you can." This part dwelt so much upon my friend's imagination, that at the close of the third act, as I was thinking of something else, he whispered me in my ear, "These  
 20 widows, sir, are the most perverse creatures in the world. But pray," says he, "you that are a critic, is the play according to your dramatic rules, as you call them? Should your people in tragedy always talk to be understood? Why, there is not a single sentence in this play that I do not know the meaning of."

The fourth act very luckily began before I had time to give the old gentleman an answer; "Well," says the knight, sitting down with great satisfaction, "I suppose we are now to see Hector's ghost." He then renewed his attention, and from time to time fell a praising the widow.  
 30 He made, indeed, a little mistake as to one of her pages, whom, at his first entering, he took for Astyanax; but he quickly set himself right in that particular, though, at the same time, he owned he should have been very glad to have seen the little boy, "who," says he, "must needs be a very fine child by the account that is given of him." Upon Hermione's going off with a menace to Pyrrhus, the

audience gave a loud clap, to which Sir Roger added, "On my word, a notable young baggage!"

As there was a very remarkable silence and stillness in the audience during the whole action, it was natural for them to take the opportunity of the intervals between the acts, to express their opinion of the players, and of their respective parts. Sir Roger, hearing a cluster of them praise Orestes, struck in with them, and told them, that he thought his friend Pylades was a very sensible man. As they were afterwards applauding Pyrrhus, Sir Roger 10 put in a second time, "And let me tell you," says he, "though he speaks but little, I like the old fellow in whiskers as well as any of them." Captain Sentry, seeing two or three wags who sat near us, lean with an attentive ear towards Sir Roger, and fearing lest they should smoke the knight, plucked him by the elbow, and whispered something in his ear, that lasted till the opening of the fifth act. The knight was wonderfully attentive to the account which Orestes gives of Pyrrhus his death, and at the conclusion of it, told me it was such a bloody piece of 20 work, that he was glad it was not done upon the stage. Seeing afterwards Orestes in his raving fit, he grew more than ordinarily serious, and took occasion to moralize (in his way) upon an evil conscience, adding, that "Orestes, in his madness, looked as if he saw something."

As we were the first that came into the house, so we were the last that went out of it; being resolved to have a clear passage for our old friend, whom we did not care to venture among the justling of the crowd. Sir Roger went out fully satisfied with his entertainment, and we 30 guarded him to his lodging in the same manner that we brought him to the play-house; being highly pleased, for my own part, not only with the performance of the excellent piece which had been presented, but with the satisfaction which it had given to the old man.

## XXVIII. WILL HONEYCOMB'S AMOURS.

No. 359.]

Tuesday, April 22, 1712.

[Budgell.

Torva leaena lupum sequitur, lupus ipse capellam;

Florentem cytisum sequitur lasciva capella.—Virg. *Ecl.* ii. 63

Lions the wolves, and wolves the kids pursue,

The kids sweet thyme,—and still I follow you.—Warton.

As we were at the club last night, I observed that my old friend Sir Roger, contrary to his usual custom, sat very silent, and, instead of minding what was said by the company, was whistling to himself in a very thoughtful mood, and playing with a cork. I jogged Sir Andrew Freeport, who sat between us; and, as we were both observing him, we saw the knight shake his head, and heard him say to himself, "A foolish woman! I can't believe it." Sir Andrew gave him a gentle pat upon the shoulder, and offered to lay him a bottle of wine that he was thinking of the widow. My old friend started, and, recovering out of his brown study, told Sir Andrew, that once in his life he had been in the right. In short, after some little hesitation, Sir Roger told us in the fulness of his heart, that he had just received a letter from his steward, which acquainted him that his old rival and antagonist in the country, Sir David Dundrum, had been making a visit to the widow. "However," says Sir Roger, "I can never think that she'll have a man that's half a year older than I am, and a noted republican into the bargain."

Will Honeycomb, who looks upon love as his particular province, interrupting our friend with a jaunty laugh, "I thought, knight," said he, "thou hadst lived long enough in the world, not to pin thy happiness upon one that is a woman, and a widow. I think that, without vanity, I may pretend to know as much of the female world as any man in Great Britain, though the chief of

my knowledge consists in this, that they are not to be known." Will immediately, with his usual fluency, rambled into an account of his own amours. "I am now," says he, "upon the verge of sixty" (though by the way we all knew he was turned of threescore). "You may easily guess," continued Will, that I have not lived so long in the world without having had some thoughts of settling in it, as the phrase is. To tell you truly, I have several times tried my fortune that way, though I cannot much boast of my success.

10

"I made my first addresses to a young lady in the country; but, when I thought things were pretty well drawing to a conclusion, her father happening to hear that I had formerly boarded with a surgeon, the old put forbid me his house, and within a fortnight after married his daughter to a fox-hunter in the neighbourhood.

"I made my next application to a widow, and attacked her so briskly, that I thought myself within a fortnight of her. As I waited upon her one morning, she told me, that she intended to keep her ready money and jointure 20 in her own hand, and desired me to call upon her attorney in Lion's inn, who would adjust with me what it was proper for me to add to it. I was so rebuffed by this overture, that I never inquired either for her or her attorney afterwards.

"A few months after, I addressed myself to a young lady who was an only daughter, and of a good family. I danced with her at several balls, squeezed her by the hand, said soft things to her, and in short made no doubt of her heart; and, though my fortune was not equal to 30 hers, I was in hopes that her fond father would not deny her the man she had fixed her affections upon. But as I went one day to the house, in order to break the matter to him, I found the whole family in confusion, and heard, to my unspeakable surprise, that Miss Jenny was that very morning run away with the butler.

"I then courted a second widow, and am at a loss to this day how I came to miss her, for she had often commended my person and behaviour. Her maid indeed told me one day, that her mistress said she never saw a gentleman with such a spindle pair of legs as Mr. Honeycomb.

"After this I laid siege to four heiresses successively, and, being a handsome young dog in those days, quickly made a breach in their hearts; but I don't know how it came to pass, though I seldom failed of getting the daughter's consent I could never in my life get the old people on my side.

"I could give you an account of a thousand other unsuccessful attempts, particularly of one which I made some years since upon an old woman, whom I had certainly borne away with flying colours, if her relations had not come pouring in to her assistance from all parts of England; may, I believe I should have got her at last, had not she been carried off by a hard frost."

As Will's transitions are extremely quick, he turned from Sir Roger, and, applying himself to me, told me there was a passage in the book I had considered last Saturday, which deserved to be writ in letters of gold; and, taking out a pocket Milton, read the following lines, which are part of one of Adam's speeches to Eve after the fall.

Oh! why did our  
 Greater wife! that peopled highest heaven  
 With spirits masculine, create at last  
 This novelty on earth, this fair defect  
 Of nature, and not fill the world at once  
 With men, as angels, without feminine?  
 Or find some other way to generate  
 Mankind? This mischief had not then befall'n,  
 And more that shall befall, innumerable  
 Disturbances on earth, through female snares.  
 And straight conjunction with this sex: for either

He shall never find out fit mate; but such  
 As some misfortune brings him, or mistake;  
 Or whom he wishes most shall seldom gain,  
 Through her perverseness; but shall see her gain'd  
 By a far worse: or if she love, withheld  
 By parents; or his happiest chose too late  
 Shall meet already link'd, and wedlock-bound  
 To fell adversary, his hate, or shame:  
 Which infinite calamity shall cause  
 To human life, and household peace confound.

10

Sir Roger listened to this passage with great attention; and, desiring Mr. Honeycomb to fold down a leaf at the place, and lend him his book, the knight put it up in his pocket, and told us that he would read over these verses again before he went to bed.

X.

## XXIX. VISIT TO SPRING GARDENS.

No. 383.]

Tuesday, May 20, 1712.

[Addison.

*Criminibus debent hortos.*—*Juv. Sat. i. 75.*

A beauteous garden, but by vice maintain'd.

As I was sitting in my chamber, and thinking on a subject for my next Spectator, I heard two or three irregular bounces at my landlady's door, and, upon the opening of it, a loud cheerful voice inquiring whether the philosopher was at home. The child who went to the door answered very innocently, that he did not lodge there. I immediately recollected that it was my good friend Sir Roger's voice; and that I had promised to go with him on the water to Spring-garden, in case it proved a good evening. The knight put me in mind of my promise from the bottom of the staircase, but told me that if I was speculating, he would stay below till I had done. Upon my coming down, I found all the children of the family got about my old friend; and my landlady

20

30



herself, who is a notable prating gossip, engaged in a conference with him; being mightily pleased with his stroking her little boy on the head, and bidding him to be a good child and mind his book.

We were no sooner come to the Temple-stairs, but we were surrounded with a crowd of watermen, offering us their respective services. Sir Roger after having looked about him very attentively, spied one with a wooden leg, and immediately gave him orders to get his boat ready. As  
10 we were walking towards it, "You must know," says Sir Roger, "I never make use of any body to row me, that has not lost either a leg or an arm. I would rather bate him a few strokes of his oar than not employ an honest man that has been wounded in the queen's service. If I was a lord or a bishop, and kept a barge, I would not put a fellow in my livery that had not a wooden leg."

My old friend, after having seated himself, and trimmed the boat with his coachman, who, being a very sober man, always serves for ballast on these occasions, we made the  
20 best of our way for Faux-hall. Sir Roger obliged the waterman to give us the history of his right leg; and, hearing that he had left it at La Hogue, with many particulars which passed in that glorious action, the knight, in the triumph of his heart, made several reflections on the greatness of the British nation; as, that one Englishman could beat three Frenchmen; that we could never be in danger of popery so long as we took care of our fleet; that the Thames was the noblest river in Europe; that London bridge was a greater piece of work than any of the seven  
30 wonders of the world; with many other honest prejudices which naturally cleave to the heart of a true Englishman.

After some short pause, the old knight, turning about his head twice or thrice, to take a survey of this great metropolis, bid me observe how thick the city was set with churches, and that there was scarce a single steeple on this side Temple-bar. "A most heathenish sight!"

says Sir Roger: "there is no religion at this end of the town. The fifty new churches will very much mend the prospect; but church-work is slow, church-work is slow."

I do not remember I have any where mentioned in Sir Roger's character, his custom of saluting every body that passes by him with a good-morrow, or a good-night. This the old man does out of the overflowings of his humanity, though at the same time it renders him so popular among all his country neighbours, that it is thought to have gone a good way in making him once or twice knight of 10 the shire. He cannot forbear this exercise of benevolence even in town, when he meets with any one in his morning or evening walk. It broke from him to several boats that passed by us on the water; but, to the knight's great surprise, as he gave the good-night to two or three young fellows a little before our landing, one of them, instead of returning the civility, asked us, what queer old put we had in the boat, with a great deal of the like Thames-ribaldry. Sir Roger seemed a little shocked at first, but at length assuming a face of magistracy, told us, that if he 20 were a Middlesex justice, he would make such vagrants know that her majesty's subjects were no more to be abused by water than by land.

We were now arrived at Spring-garden, which is excellently pleasant at this time of the year. When I considered the fragrancy of the walks and bowers, with the choirs of birds that sung upon the trees, and the loose tribe of people that walked under their shades, I could not but look upon the place as a kind of Mahometan paradise. Sir Roger told me, it put him in mind of a 30 little coppice by his house in the country, which his chaplain used to call an aviary of nightingales. "You must understand," says the knight, "that there is nothing in the world that pleases a man in love so much as your nightingale. Ah, Mr. Spectator, the many moon-light nights that I have walked by myself, and thought on the

widow by the music of the nightingale!" He here fetched a deep sigh, and was falling into a fit of musing, when a mask, who came behind him, gave him a gentle tap upon the shoulder, and asked him if he would drink a bottle of mead with her? But the knight, being startled at so unexpected familiarity, and displeased to be interrupted in his thoughts of the widow, bid her go about her business.

We concluded our walk with a glass of Burton ale, and  
10 a slice of hung beef. When we had done eating ourselves, the knight called a waiter to him, and bid him carry the remainder to the waterman that had but one leg. I perceived the fellow stared upon him at the oddness of the message, and was going to be saucy; upon which I ratified the knight's commands with a peremptory look.

I.

### XXX. DEATH OF SIR ROGER.

No. 517.] Thursday, October 23, 1712. [Addison.

*Heu pietas! heu prisca fides!*—Virg. *Aen.* vi. 878.

Mirror of ancient faith!

Undaunted worth! Inviolable truth!—Dryden.

We last night received a piece of ill news at our club, which  
20 very sensibly afflicted every one of us. I question not but my readers themselves will be troubled at the hearing of it. To keep them no longer in suspense, Sir Roger de Coverley is dead. He departed this life at his house in the country, after a few weeks' sickness. Sir Andrew Freeport has a letter from one of his correspondents in those parts, that informs him the old man caught a cold at the county sessions, as he was very warmly promoting an address of his own penning, in which he succeeded according to his wishes.

But this particular comes from a Whig justice of peace, who was always Sir Roger's enemy and antagonist. I have letters both from the chaplain and Captain Sentry, which mention nothing of it, but are filled with many particulars to the honour of the good old man. I have likewise a letter from the butler, who took so much care of me last summer when I was at the knight's house. As my friend the butler mentions, in the simplicity of his heart, several circumstances the others have passed over in silence, I shall give my reader a copy of his letter, without any alteration or diminution. 10

"Honoured Sir.

"Knowing that you was my old master's good friend, I could not forbear sending you the melancholy news of his death, which has afflicted the whole country, as well as his poor servants, who loved him, I may say, better than we did our lives. I am afraid he caught his death the last county sessions, where he would go to see justice done to a poor widow woman, and her fatherless children, that had been wronged by a neighbouring gentleman; for you know, sir, my good master was always the poor man's friend. Upon 20 his coming home, the first complaint he made was, that he had lost his roast-beef stomach, not being able to touch a sirloin, which was served up according to custom; and you know he used to take great delight in it. From that time forward he grew worse and worse, but still kept a good heart to the last. Indeed we were once in great hope of his recovery, upon a kind message that was sent him from the widow lady whom he had made love to the forty last years of his life; but this only proved a lightning before death. He has bequeathed to this lady, as a token of his love, a 30 great pearl necklace, and a couple of silver bracelets set with jewels, which belonged to my good old lady his mother. He has bequeathed the fine white gelding, that he used to ride a hunting upon, to his chaplain, because he thought he would be kind to him, and has left you all his books. He has, moreover, bequeathed to the chap-

lain a very pretty tenement with good lands about it. It being a very cold day when he made his will, he left for mourning to every man in the parish a great frieze-coat, and to every woman a black riding-hood. It was a moving sight to see him take leave of his poor servants, commending us all for our fidelity, whilst we were not able to speak a word for weeping. As we most of us are grown grey-headed in our dear master's service, he has left us pensions and legacies, which we may live very comfortably upon

10 the remaining part of our days. He has bequeathed a great deal more in charity, which is not yet come to my knowledge, and it is peremptorily said in the parish, that he has left money to build a steeple to the church: for he was heard to say some time ago, that if he lived two years longer, Coverley church should have a steeple to it. The chaplain tells everybody that he made a very good end, and never speaks of him without tears. He was buried, according to his own directions, among the family of the Coverlies, on the left hand of his father Sir Arthur. The coffin was carried by six of his

20 tenants, and the pall held up by six of the quorum. The whole parish followed the corpse with heavy hearts, and in their mourning suits; the men in frieze, and the women in riding-hoods. Captain Sentry, my master's nephew, has taken possession of the Hall-house, and the whole estate. When my old master saw him, a little before his death, he shook him by the hand, and wished him joy of the estate which was falling to him, desiring him only to make a good use of it, and to pay the several legacies, and the gifts of charity, which he told him he had left as quit rents upon the estate.

30 The captain truly seems a courteous man, though he says but little. He makes much of those whom my master loved, and shows great kindness to the old house-dog, that you know my poor master was so fond of. It would have gone to your heart to have heard the moans the dumb creature made on the day of my master's death. He has never joyed himself since; no more has any of us. It was the melancholiest day

for the poor people that ever happened in Worcestershire.  
This being all from,

Honoured sir, your most sorrowful servant,

EDWARD BISCUIT."

" P.S.—My master desired, some weeks before he died, that a book which comes up to you by the carrier, should be given to Sir Andrew Freeport in his name."

This letter, notwithstanding the poor butler's manner of writing it, gave us such an idea of our good old friend, that, upon the reading of it, there was not a dry eye in the club. 10  
Sir Andrew opening the book, found it to be a collection of Acts of Parliament. There was, in particular, the Act of Uniformity, with some passages in it marked by Sir Roger's own hand. Sir Andrew found that they related to two or three points, which he had disputed with Sir Roger the last time he appeared at the club. Sir Andrew, who would have been merry at such an incident on another occasion, at the sight of the old man's writing, burst into tears, and put the book in his pocket. Captain Sentry informs me, that the knight has left rings and mourning for every one in the club. 20

## NOTES

### THE SPECTATOR'S ACCOUNT OF HIMSELF. No. 1.

P. 1, l. 7. **peruses**, reads through, examines, surveys. "A coined word; from **Per-** and **Use**. No other source can well be assigned; but it must be admitted to be a barbarous and ill-formed word, compounded of Latin and French, and by no means used in the true sense; since to *per-use* could only mean to use thoroughly. The sense of the word comes nearer to that of the F. *revoir* or E. 'survey' or 'examine'; cp. 'Myself I then *per-used*,' i.e. surveyed, Milton, *P. L.* viii. 267; 'Who first with curious eye *Perused* him,' *id.* *P. R.* i. 320. The F. *revoir* and E. *survey* both point to the Lat. *videre*, to see;...there is a fair argument for the supposed barbarous coinage from *per* and *use*, in the fact that compounds with *per* were once far more common than they are now"... (*Skeat, Ety. Dict.*).

l. 8. **black**, dark; frequent in Shakespeare in this sense, e.g. *T.G.* v. 2. 12, "*Black men are pearls in beauteous ladies' eyes.*"

P. 2, l. 7. **then depending**, then in progress, not yet settled.

l. 8. **a justice of the peace**, a title given to persons of position and character who are appointed to keep the peace of the neighbourhood in which they dwell.

l. 9. **presaged**, indicated; Lat. *praesagire*, to feel or perceive beforehand, to have a presentiment of a thing.

l. 13. **to favour**, to give countenance to, to support.

l. 15. **my rattle**, a rattle and a coral are toys commonly given to infants, the former to amuse by its noise, the latter, which generally has little silver bells attached to it, to be sucked.

l. 20. **nonage**, minority, before one comes of age; Lat. *non*, not, and *age*. **sullen**, reserved, hard to draw out.

l. 22. **my parts**, my natural abilities: would wear well, would be lasting, would stand the wear and tear of time; not fail me as I grew older, like those of more precocious children; a metaphor from the wearing of clothes.



l. 25. **the public exercises**, the term formerly given to the scholastic disputations held in colleges or in the public schools of the University as a qualification for a degree; answering to the examinations of modern times.

ll. 30, 1. **the learned...tongues**, used more especially of the classical languages of Greece and Rome.

l. 35. **unaccountable**, that no one could make out, understand.

P. 3, l. 5. **Grand Cairo**, in Egypt; Arabic *al Kahira*, the Victorious city.

ll. 7, 8. **returned...satisfaction**, a sarcastic allusion to a learned work on the Pyramids, entitled *Pyramidographia*, by John Greaves (b. 1602, d. 1652), an English Orientalist and Mathematician, who visited Egypt in 1638.

l. 15. **a round**, a circle gathered round the fire: **Will's**, a coffee-house in Russell Street, Covent Garden, patronized especially by literary men and famous as the constant resort of Dryden. The coffee-houses served most of the purposes of the modern clubs, though the favourite beverages were then tea, coffee, chocolate and cocoa.

l. 18. **Child's**, in St. Paul's Churchyard, a coffee-house especially affected by the clergy: **the Post-Man**, one of the papers of the day.

l. 20. **St. James's**, another coffee-house in St. James's Street; a great resort of the Whigs. Salmon, *Essays from the Spectator* quotes the *Spectator*, No. 403, "I first of all called in at St. James's, where I found the whole outward room in a buzz of politics. The speculations were but very indifferent towards the door, but grew finer as you advanced to the upper end of the room, and were so improved by a knot of theorists who sat in the inner room, within the steams of the coffee-pot, that I there heard the whole Spanish monarchy disposed of, and all the line of Bourbon provided for in less than a quarter of an hour."

l. 22. **improve**, neuter; to improve himself, his understanding, etc.

l. 23. **the Grecian**, in Devereux Court in the Strand, the oldest coffee-house in London, much frequented by the barristers of the Temple. **the Cocoa-Tree**, in St. James's Street, the resort of the Tories in Queen Anne's reign.

ll. 24, 5. **the theatres...Hay-Market**, both still in existence and among the most important in London. Drury Lane Theatre was "opened in 1674 with an address by Dryden, who extolled the advantages of its then country situation over those of the 'Duke's Theatre' in Dorset Gardens: 'Our house relieves the ladies from the frights of ill-paved streets and long dark winter nights.' The burning of the theatre (Feb. 24, 1809) is rendered memorable by the publication of the 'Rejected Addresses,' the famous *jeu d'esprit* of James and Horace Smith [parodying the addresses for the opening of the new theatre supposed to have been sent into the Committee by various then living poets, etc.]" (Hare, *Walks in London*, i. 123). **The Hay-Market**, in a street of the

same name between Pall Mall and Piccadilly, and parallel to St. James's Street, so called because a market was held there for hay and straw from Elizabeth's time to the early years of the nineteenth century.

1. 26. **the Exchange**, the Royal Exchange, in the city at the east end of the Poultry, originally built by Sir Thomas Gresham, the great merchant prince of the sixteenth century, and opened by Elizabeth in 1571; destroyed by the Great Fire of London in 1666, and again by fire in 1838. The present building was erected in 1844.

1. 27. **Jonathan's**, a coffee-house in Cornhill, where the Stock Exchange was originally held, and the great scene of action in the South-Sea Bubble in 1720.

1. 32. **a speculative statesman**, a statesman in theory, though not one in practice; the adjective qualifies **soldier**, **merchant**, and **artizan** also.

1. 34. **versed in...husband**, acquainted with the duties and position of a husband.

1. 35. **economy**, management of a household.

P. 4, l. 1. **blots**, mistakes; the common proverb is "Lookers on see most of the game."

1. 2. **espoused**, closely united myself with; literally to give or take as a spouse.

ll. 4, 5. **unless...side**, unless the hostilities of either party should compel me to range myself on one side or the other.

1. 12. **occasion**, opportunity and propriety.

ll. 16, 7. **to print myself out**, to put on paper all the reflections that have occurred to me, and the experience of the world that I have gained during my life.

1. 20. **a sheet full**, as much as is contained in a single sheet.

1. 27. **spoken to**, referred to, made mention of.

1. 32. **to the embellishment of my paper**, towards making my paper more attractive and interesting.

1. 36. **civilities**, acts of civility, polite attentions.

P. 5, l. 4. **complexion**, here probably used, as nowadays, in the restricted sense of the colouring of the face, though formerly frequent in the wider sense of external appearance generally.

1. 5. **make discoveries of**, reveal; cp. p. 73, l. 30.

1. 10. **concerted**, agreed upon together.

1. 12. **to stand...front**, to be their representative.

1. 14. **Mr. Buckley's** "Samuel Buckley was what we should now call the publisher of the 'Spectator'" (Salmon). **Little Britain**, so called from the mansion of John, Duke of Bretagne in the time of Edward the Second, a street running into Aldersgate Street, and in Addison's day the great quarter of the booksellers.

## OF THE CLUB. No. 2.

P. 5, l. 25. **Sir Roger.** The original of this character was long supposed, though without any sufficient evidence to be a certain Sir John Packington, a Worcestershire baronet.

ll. 25, 6. **that famous country-dance**, a dance still in use, more especially at the end of a ball; so called from being more common in country places than in towns, though commonly supposed to be from the F. *contre-danse*. Wills, quoted by Salmon, says, "And autograph account by Ralph Thoresby, of the family of Calverley of Calverley, in Yorkshire, dated 1717, and which is now in the possession of Sir W. Calverley Trevelyan, states that the tune of 'Roger a Calverley' was named after Sir Roger of Calverley, who lived in the time of Richard the First."...

27. **parts**, mental endowments.

1. 30-P. 6, l. 1. **only as...wrong**, only in so far, in such respects, as his opinions of what is right and wrong differ from those of the world in general; his singularities not being mere whims and caprices without reasonable foundation or origin.

1. 3. **unconfined...forms**, not hampered by any forms of behaviour that are prescribed merely by fashion and custom.

1. 6. **Soho Square**, to the south of Oxford Street, formerly called King's Square, was a vrey fashionable **part** of the town from the days of the Stuarts to the middle of the eighteenth century. It is said to derive its name from the words "So Hoc," the cry used in hunting the hare, a pastime in which the Mayor and Corporation used to indulge in the fields on which the square was afterwards built.

1. 7. **by reason**, because; a phrase now almost obsolete: **crossed**, thwarted, disappointed. **perverse**, *sc.* so far as his wishes were concerned.

1. 10. **my Lord Rochester...Etherege**, two well-known men of fashion of the time; the former, John Wilmot, Earl of Rochester, a courtier and a poet, infamous for his debauchery; the latter, **Sir George**, a writer of comedies and equally loose in his life; **my** was and still is often prefixed to the title 'Lord' sometimes in the way of respect, sometimes with a sarcastic emphasis.

1. 11. **Bully Dawson**, a notorious sharper and debauchee about town at this period.

1. 13. **ill-used**, *sc.* in being first encouraged and afterwards repulsed.

1. 15. **joyial**, merry, generally with the idea of boisterous mirth. Like 'mercurial,' 'saturnine,' etc., a relic of the former belief in astrology according to which a man's temperament was supposed to be affected by the planet just rising above the eastern horizon at his birth. Thus the planet of Jupiter or Jove was considered of joyful augury and men born under it to be of a joyous disposition, those born under Saturn to

partake of the gloomy nature of that god, those under Mercury to resemble that light-hearted deity. Other words having a similar origin are 'disastrous,' 'ill-starred,' 'influence,' etc.

1. 16. **never dressed afterwards**, *sc.* fashionably; never cared what he wore, whether it was in the fashion or not.

1. 17. **doublet**, an inner garment which served, so to speak, as a lining or double to the outer one; *F. double*, with the diminutive suffix *-et*.

1. 19. **in and out**, *sc.* of fashion.

1. 21. **a good house**, a well-appointed and hospitable house.

1. 28. **a justice of the quorum**, one of the county justices, magistrates. The word **quorum**, now used of a number of members of any body sufficient to transact business, is the Lat. *quorum*, *of whom*, it being usual formerly to enumerate the members forming a committee, *of whom* a certain number must be present at a meeting.

1. 29. **a quarter-session**, the quarterly meeting of the justices for the trial of offenders against the peace; we now use the plural **quarter-sessions**.

11. 30, 1. **by explaining...Game-Act**, said with a pleasant sarcasm, as though the Act for the preservation of game was something beyond ordinary comprehension. The Game Laws are a remnant of the forest laws imposed by William the Conqueror, who, to preserve his game, made it forfeiture of property to disable a wild beast, and loss of eyes for a stag, buck, or boar. The first Game Act was passed in 1496, and there have been many others since then. See note on p. 71, l. 7.

1. 33. **the Inner-Temple**. The military order of "soldiers of the Temple," to protect pilgrims, was founded about 1118 by Baldwin II., King of Jerusalem. The Templars were numerous in several countries, and came to England before 1185. At the suppression of the Order, their dwelling, the Temple, was purchased by the professors of the common law, and converted into inns, 1311, afterwards called the Inner and Middle Temple. Essex House, also a part of the house of the Templars, was called the Outer Temple, being situated without Temple Bar.

1. 36. **humoursome**, fanciful. odd-natured.

P. 7, ll. 2, 3. **and is the most...stage**, but, instead of giving his attention to such matters, devotes himself entirely to theatrical affairs.

1. 3. **Aristotle**, here referring to the great philosopher's writings on poetry, more especially in regard to the drama. **Longinus**, a distinguished Greek philosopher and grammarian of the third century of our era, whose work entitled *On the Sublime* contains, among other subjects, criticisms on poetry.

1. 4. **Littleton or Coke**, two distinguished jurists of the seventeenth century, the latter a rival of Bacon's who was dismissed from his post of Chief Justice, in 1615, for having displeased the King, James the First.

15. **marriage-articles**, settlements as to money made at marriages.

l. 7. **to answer...lump**, to consider and answer in return for a lump sum, a sum paid for the whole, not for separate cases.

l. 11. **Tully**, Marcus Tullius Cicero, the great Roman orator and statesman, B.C. 106-43.

l. 13. **This turn**, this bent or inclination of character.

l. 14. **disinterested**, his concern not being with matters of ordinary interest; he having no personal interest in the affairs which occupied his associates.

l. 16. **too just**, too rigorous in his valuation of them.

l. 19. **delicate**, nice, fastidious, refined.

ll. 21, 2. **his hour of business**, the time of the day at which he becomes seriously occupied, while others are relaxing their minds.

l. 22. **New Inn**, stood on what is now the east side of Aldwych.

l. 23. **takes a turn**, spends a short time.

l. 23. **rubbed**, dusted. **perriwig**, now spelt 'periwig.' "The *i* after *r* is corruptly inserted; Minshew gives the spellings *per-wigge* and *perwicke*. Of these forms, *perwigge* is a weakened form of *perwicke* or *perwick*? and *perwick* is an E. rendering of the O. Du. form, as distinct from *peruke*, which is the F. form—O. Du. *perryk*...—F. *perruque*, a *peruke* [an artificial head of hair]"... (Skeat, *Ety. Dict.*).

l. 25. **the Rose**, then a tavern on the outside of Temple Bar.

l. 33. **would make...figure**, would not be thought much of, would not be applauded.

ll. 33, 4. **he calls...common**, speaks of the sea as though it were as much a British possession as is the common the possession of an English village. A 'Common' is a portion of meadowland in a village, which for the purpose of feeding animals, for rural sports, etc., is property common to the villagers in general.

P. 8, l. 3. **and if another, from another**, an elliptical expression for 'and if another part of our trade were well cultivated, we should gain from another nation.'

ll. 15, 6. **that there is not...owner**, *i.e.* that he is a very rich man indeed, and therefore that to say that **England...men** is equivalent to saying its wealth would be very much greater than that of any other nation.

l. 17. **Captain Sentry**, "It has been said, that the real person alluded to under this name was C. Kempenfelt, father of the Admiral Kempenfelt who deplorably lost his life when the Royal George of 100 guns sunk at Spithead, Aug. 29, 1782" (Ferguson).

ll. 20. 1. **at putting...them**, in bringing their talents so prominently under the notice of those who ought to consider them as to ensure their being properly regarded.

l. 23. **engagements**, battles.

ll. 26, 7. **who is not...soldier**, unless, in addition to his being an able soldier, he has also enough of the arts of a courtier to recommend himself to those in authority.

l. 28. **impudence**, effrontery, unabashed assurance.

ll. 29, 30. **talked to this purpose**, spoken on this subject in this way, to this purport.

l. 31. **left the world**, retired into private life.

l. 33. **him**, the man who.

ll. 34, 5. **who endeavour...commander**, whose aim is the same as his own, viz. to obtain the good graces of some superior in military command.

l. 36. **disposing**, dispensing their favour.

P. 9. l. 2. **a mind**, an inclination.

ll. 2, 3. **to come at me**, to reach me, i.e. my case.

l. 4. **would make a figure**, aims at winning a high position for himself. See note on p. 7, l. 33.

ll. 15, 6. **in the utmost...him**, immeasurably his inferiors in rank.

l. 18. **humourists**, strange-natured, eccentric fellows.

l. 19. **gallantries**, love adventures.

ll. 21, 2. **should be...life**, ought to be considered an old man, careful of his person, careful to live a life which should not prematurely age him, careful of a youthful appearance so far as it may be preserved by a life of moderation.

l. 23. **a very easy fortune**, such a sufficiency of wealth as prevents any anxiety on that score.

ll. 24, 5. **traces in his brain**, marks of senility in his understanding...**well turned**, well formed, of a good figure.

l. 28. **habits**, fashions of dress.

ll. 28, 9. **He can smile...easily**, i.e. he is not so taken up with himself as not to be able to meet men with ready courtesy.

l. 30. **mode**, fashion.

l. 36. **the Duke of Monmouth**, James Crofts, a natural son of Charles II., by Lucy Waters, b. 1649, remarkable for his personal beauty and graceful manners. Banished from England in 1683 for complicity in the Rye-house plot; invaded England in 1685; proclaimed king at Taunton, 20th June in the same year, defeated at Sedgemoor, 6th July, beheaded on Tower-hill, 15th July.

P. 10, l. 1. **smitten**, sc. with love.

l. 2. **was taken with him**, fell in love with him.

l. 4. **a blow of a fan**, a tap of the fan as a mark of favourable notice; the fan played a more important part in the gallantries of those days than it does now; see the *Essay on The Exercise of the Fan*.

1. 5. **Lord such-a-one**, some lord whose name is not mentioned.
1. 7. **us of...turn**, us who are of a graver disposition.
- ll. 13, 4. **adds to every man...himself**, puts every man into a better humour with himself and all about him.
1. 18. **preferments in his function**, professional advancement, clerical offices, appointments.
- ll. 19, 20. **a chamber-counsellor**, one whose practice consists in giving legal opinions upon matters in dispute, or needing settlements, without having to go into court to conduct cases; such counsellors are chiefly conveyancers, equity lawyers, etc.
1. 22. **advances**, brings into repute.
1. 25. **fall on...topic**, take up, discourse upon, some question of religion.
- ll. 27, 8. **conceives...infirmities**, finds in the decay of his physical powers an assurance that he will shortly exchange that decay for life eternal.

## SIR ROGER AT HOME. No. 106.

- P. 11, l. 8. to **pass away**, we should now omit **away**.
1. 11. **speculations**, meditations such as a spectator of life might indulge in.
1. 15. **without...merry**, without worrying me by efforts to make me seem more cheerful; letting me alone when not inclined to mirth.
- ll. 16, 7. **only shows...distance**, knowing my natural shyness.
1. 18. **stealing a sight**, furtively trying to get a glimpse of me.
1. 22. **staid**, sedate.
1. 26. **are all in years**, are all getting old.
1. 27. **valet de chambre**, personal servant, one who attends him in his bedroom, helping to dress and undress him, etc.
- l. 30. **a privy-councillor**, a member of the sovereign's Privy Council, and therefore presumed to be a man of wisdom and discretion.
1. 31. **even...house-dog**, even in the ways of the old house-dog. who shows in his behaviour the affectionate treatment to which he has been used: **pad**, horse ridden on a pad, or stuffed saddle. So we speak of a 'pad' elephant as opposed to one carrying a *huada*.
- P. 12. l. 12. **tempered**, mixed.
1. 14. **humanity**, kindness of manner: **engages**, binds with affection.
1. 15. **is pleasant...them**, makes jokes in a pleasant way at their expense: **family**, household.
1. 19. **concern**, anxiety.



11. 28, 9. **in the nature of a chaplain**, as a sort of domestic priest. In those days gentlemen of means, especially those living in the country, generally had a private chaplain attached to the household; and his position, unlike that of Sir Roger's chaplain, was usually of an almost menial character.

P. 13, l. 2. **extravagance**, wildness, exuberance.

l. 4. **cast**, disposition, character, of mind.

l. 11. **insulted...Greek**, humiliated by a display of learning which his own education had neglected.

l. 14. **aspect**, personal appearance.

l. 16. **backgammon**, a game played with moveable pieces, as in draughts, upon a board marked with 'points' or divisions, the moves of the pieces being regulated by the numbers thrown by a pair of dice, and the object being with each player to move his pieces from his own 'table,' or division of the board, to that of his opponent and then to be the first to get them off the board altogether, a result in the main due to luck in throwing the dice, though considerable skill is required in moving the pieces. The game, though still played, is not so much in vogue as in Addison's day; the origin of the word is uncertain.

11. 21, 2. **he shall find**, the **shall** indicates determination, not mere futurity.

l. 35. **pronounce**, deliver.

l. 26. **digested**, arranged.

P. 14, l. 5. **preached**, was to preach, i.e. whose sermon was to be read.

l. 6. **the Bishop of St. Asaph**, at that time Dr. William Fleetwood.

11. 7-10. **South, Tillotson, Saunderson, Barrow, Calamy**, all famous divines of the period.

11. 22, 3. **endeavour after**, aim at.

23. **a handsome elocution**, an agreeable manner of delivery, due to the words being clearly and accurately pronounced, the sentences well marked, the emphasis placed, where it should be, etc.

l. 24. **proper to enforce**, suited to impress, calculated to lay due stress upon.

l. 26. **edifying**, instructive; originally used in the literal sense of 'building up'; now confined to figurative building up.

#### THE COVERLEY HOUSEHOLD. No. 107.

P. 15, l. 10. **the general...servants**, the bad manners of servants nowadays as compared with their manners in former days.

l. 12. **carries...satisfaction**, shows how well contented each is with his lot.

l. 16. **that servants fly**, the more usual construction now would be 'for servants to fly.'

l. 18. **industriously**, of set purpose.

ll. 19, 20. **It is on both sides...calling**, and when a servant makes his appearance without being summoned, the master looks upon it as receiving, and the servant as paying, a friendly visit.

l. 23, 4. **as ever...beforehand**, as always to have more than sufficient to meet present demands; to have money in hand for future contingencies; to have the balance on the right side. Cp. *The Spectator*, No. 450, "*Having little or nothing, beforehand*, and living from hand to mouth." So *behindhand*=in arrear as to the discharge of one's liabilities, in debt. Cp. Swift, *Tale of a Tub*, 2, "*Having run something behind-hand with the world.*"

l. 29. **the lower...family**, i.e. the servants. Of old the word *family*, more commonly than at present, included all who lived in one house or under one head, parents, children, and servants, etc. It is from Lat. *familia*, household, from *familus*, servant.

l. 31. **rated**, abused, scolded.

P. 16, l. 2. **mean**, petty-minded, ungenerous: **worthy**, deserving.

ll. 3, 4. **that he came...order**, as to have made it possible for him to have carried out his orders so quickly. All such inquiries show the master's interest in his servants and in those in his neighbourhood, small as well as great.

l. 8. **preserves a respect**, has won and always retains a reverential homage; in all his doings and at all times is regarded by his servants as some one to whom reverence is due.

l. 11. **the distinction**, the mark of favour by which he is distinguished from others less worthy; the honour which he feels it to be to be allowed to come into his master's presence.

l. 17. **cast clothes**, clothes which have been worn till they were no longer fit for wearing and then been rejected; left-off clothes.

l. 19. **the parties**, i.e. the master who has once worn them and the servant that now wears them after being cast off.

l. 20. **pleasant**, facetious, jocular: **on this occasion**, sc. when it has happened that a servant appears wearing his master's old clothes.

ll. 21, 2. **in that coat**, when dressed in that coat.

ll. 22, 3. **was the most...himself**, was that on which he prided himself more than upon anything else as distinguishing him by its novelty, its splendour, its fashion, etc., from all other persons. Cp. *distinction*, l. 11 above.

l. 25. **of this kind**, referring to bounties, not to ladies.

l. 26. **a fine woman**, a lady of fashion, rank.

l. 27. **becoming**, literally suitable, befitting; and so, graceful, ornamental.

1. 30-2. a good servant...all, one who serves him faithfully is sure to be so well rewarded that after a few years he will be independent of service, and be able to set up for himself in some trade or occupation which he likes.

1. 33. husband, manager, of his affairs; the old sense of the word is 'master of a house' and so corresponds with 'economist,' one who manages a household; hence 'a good husband' = an economical person, a prudent manager of his household affairs, his money matters.

1. 34. the skill of the purse, care in proportioning his expenditure to his income: cardinal, that on which all other virtues hinge, turn, are dependent; Lat. *cardo*, a hinge.

11. 35, 6. that frugality...generosity, that liberality is possible only in one who is prudent in his expenditure; generosity in its larger sense includes all the nobler virtues, the word being from Lat. *generosus*, of good or noble birth, and so noble-minded, magnanimous; here it is used in the more restricted sense of liberality in giving, free-handedness.

1. 36. fine, here used in its strictly legal sense. "The necessary changes which are constantly occurring of the persons who from time to time are tenants on the rolls, form occasionally a source of considerable profit to the lords. For by the custom of manors, on every change of tenancy, whether by death or alienation, fines of more or less amount become payable to the lord. By the customs of some manors, the fine payable was anciently arbitrary; but in modern times, fines, even when arbitrary by custom, are restrained to two years' improved value of the land after deducting quit rents" (Williams, *Law of Real Property*, p. 323).

P. 17, l. 1. a tenement, or thing held, was originally used of lands, houses, and immovable property, i.e., things held of a feudal superior; but as in ordinary language, so also in law, a tenement often means merely a house: falls, falls in, reverts to the lord of the manor, the tenancy coming to an end: that settlement, the means of settling himself in life by becoming tenant of a farm, public-house, house of business, etc.

1. 2. has a mind...world, is desirous of setting up in business for himself: a stranger, a new comer who enters upon the tenancy.

1. 6. to have no will...another, to be always in a state of dependence, the state of a servant.

11. 8, 9. goes on...livelihoods, makes every effort to establish his servants in positions in which they can earn their livelihood by independent occupation, such as farming, trading, etc.

1. 12, 3. the visitants...country, those who came from various parts of the neighbourhood to pay him a visit of welcome on his returning from town to his country seat.

11. 16, 7. finer gentlemen...courtiers, men of more refined manners, and greater courtesy in their way of welcoming their old master.

l. 18. **manumission**, freeing from service: a Latin term. The oldest form of *manumissio*, giving freedom to a slave, was as follows: The master brought his slave before the magistrate, and stated the grounds of the intended manumission; the lictor laid a rod on the head of the slave, accompanying the action with certain formal words in which he declared his freedom; and the master, holding the slave, after pronouncing his wish that he should be set free, turned him round and let him go (*emisit e manu*), whence the general name of the act of manumission.

ll. 22, 3. **which can be pleased...them**, which while willing to be pleased, ready to accept acts of dutiful service, have not the generosity to reward them.

ll. 27, 8. **shown to their undone patrons...them**, behaved in such a manner to their masters when in a state of ruin as to show them that if fortune had changed, everything else remained unchanged, and that they were as devoted servants as in the days of their master's fullest prosperity; under the general sense of protector, defender, the Lat. *patronus* was also the former master of a freedman.

ll. 35, 6. **sent...prentice**, put him out as apprentice to some trade by paying the premium required by the master tradesman who was to teach him his trade.

P. 18, l. 5. **livery**, literally, a thing delivered; thence a uniform delivered to servants to be worn by them.

ll. 9, 10. **for an account of it**, for a relation of the incidents set forth in the picture.

l. 13. **some sudden illness**, such as cramp in his limbs.

ll. 14, 5. **the dress**, the livery which the servant had worn up to that time, thus declaring him to be no longer a servant.

l. 16. **bounty**, generosity.

l. 17. **seat**, place of residence.

l. 21, **a little dissatisfied**, *sc.* at the former servant being painted in his servant's livery, not in such a dress as he now wore.

l. 24. **habit**, dress, costume.

#### CHARACTER OF WILL WIMBLE. No. 108.

P. 18. l. 30. **Mr. William Wimble**, "A Yorkshire gentleman, whose name was Mr. Thomas Morecraft" (Ferguson).

P. 19, l. 1. **with his service**, with an expression of his good-will; with his compliments, as we now say.

l. 6. **a jack**, a pike, a river fish of a very voracious character and one affording considerable sport to the fisherman; in some parts of the country the name 'jack' is used only of young pike.

1. 10. **the bowling-green**, in former days the game of bowls was a very favourite pastime, and few country seats were without their bowling greens; nowadays these greens are rarely to be seen except in the Fellows' Gardens at the Universities.

11. 13, 4. **I have not...past**, *i.e.* have been constantly on horse-back for the last six days, riding about the country round Eton.

1. 15. **hugely**, with the keenest appetite; a word that in a figurative sense seems to be growing obsolete.

1. 28. **handicrafts**, manual occupations. The word is "a corruption of *handcraft*; the insertion of *i* being due to an imitation of the form of *handiwork*, in which the *i*" [representing the prefix *ge-* in A.S.] "is a real part of the word" (*Skcat. Ety. Dict*): a **May-fly**, an artificial fly made in imitation of a fly so called which trout take greedily in that month.

11. 28, 19. **to a miracle**, with extraordinary skill in imitating the real fly.

1. 29. **angle-rods**, fishing rods; originally the word 'angle' was used of the rod with its line, as *e.g.* *A. C.* ii. 5. 10, "Give me mine *angle*; we'll to the river." Nowadays 'angling,' *i.e.* bottom fishing, fishing with a bait that is allowed to fall to the bottom, is contrasted with fly-fishing, in which the bait is thrown upon the surface of the water and drawn along to tempt the fish by imitating the course of the natural fly.

1. 30. **officious**, ready to do a kindness; at present the word is always used in a bad sense of over-eagerness to meddle in any matter.

1. 31. **upon...family**, in consequence of his belonging to a good family, being well born.

1. 33. **a tulip root**; in Addison's day, owing to the introduction of Dutch fashions by William the Third, Prince of Orange, and his followers, tulip growing was more cared for than at present. Here this carrying of a tulip root is merely an instance of the small civilities in which Will Wimble delighted.

1. 34. **exchanges**, arranges the exchange between, etc,

P. 20, 1. 1. **weaved**, we should now say *woven*.

1. 2. **a setting dog**, a 'setter,' as we now call a spaniel trained to sit as soon as it marks down the game which the sportsmen are beating for; other spaniels are called 'pointers,' as being trained to 'point' by lifting up the paw when coming near the game, and others 'retrievers' from their retrieving, bringing back the game when brought down by the gun: **made**, trained; a technical term still in use.

1. 3. **of his own knitting**, which he had knitted himself.

11. 5, 6. **how they wear**, whether they were wearing well or are nearly worn out; **they**, because his modesty does not like to mention the name of the article.

1. 7. **humours**, fanciful ways.

l. 9. **make up to us**, approach us; another (colloquial) sense of the phrase is to pay court to, to approach (figuratively) with servile deference.

l. 17. **shuttlecocks**, conical pieces of cork stuck round the edge with small feathers and bandied backwards and forwards by a kind of racquet in the game of battledore and shuttlecock, a game still played by children. When played by grown-up people, over a net, like lawn tennis, it is called badminton.

l. 21. **sprung**, disturbed and caused to fly out from its place of concealment in the grass or underwood.

ll. 23, 4. **the game that I look for**, the game I try to hunt down, the objects of my search.

l. 32. **in a most sumptuous manner**, Addison probably refers to the fennel, with which it is customary to deck a pike when served at table.

ll. 33, 4. **played with it**, a fish is said to be 'played with,' or nowadays 'played,' when the line is loosened so as to allow it free play in the water, then tightened to bring it up towards the bank, the operation being repeated time after time until the fish is completely tired out and can be landed: **foiled**, baffled its attempts to get off the hook or break the line.

l. 35. **all the first course**, all the time we were eating the first course; the dinner is divided into several courses, ordinarily three or four, consisting of various kinds of food, but sometimes prolonged to as many as seven or more.

l. 36-P. 21, l. 1. **furnished conversation**. Will Wimble discoursing all the time upon his experiences in shooting wild fowl.

l. 2. **the quail-pipe**, a pipe or reed used in luring quail; it is thus described by Bate, quoted in Nares's *Glossary*, "A quail pipe or call is a small whistle, and there is over the top of it some writhed wyer [*i.e.* twisted wire], which must be wrought over with leather; hold the whistle in your left hand, and the top of the leather between the fore finger and top of the thumb of your right hand, and by pulling straight the said leather, and letting it slacke nimbly, it will sound like the cry of a quail."

ll. 10, 1. **might have...esteem**, might have raised him to a position in which he would have gained the esteem of his fellowmen.

l. 16. **had rather see**, would prefer to see.

l. 17. **like gentlemen**, retaining the position of a gentleman.

l. 18. **quality**, birth and breeding: **humour**, caprice, fanciful notions.

l. 19. **happiness**, good fortune, fortunate custom.

l. 21. **any liberal...profession**, such as divinity, law, physic.

l. 24. **launched**, a metaphor from sending a vessel into the water from the slips on which it rests while in the building dock.

l. 30. **improper**, unsuited in his qualifications.

l. 31. **turned**, formed, adapted.

### SIR ROGER'S ANCESTORS. No. 109.

P. 22, l. 3. **the gallery**, *sc.* of pictures.

l. 6. **conversation**, intercourse; the older and more literal sense of the word.

ll. 13, 4. **after his blunt...things**, in the abrupt way he has of entering upon a subject without anything occurring to lead up to it.

ll. 17, 8. **the force of dress**, the effect which dress has upon the person and character of the wearer.

l. 23. **jetting**, standing out from the body in expansive folds. So *jet* in Elizabethan English was generally used intransitively, *e.g.* *T. N.* ii. 5, 36, "how he *jets* under his advanced plumes." *i.e.* struts, stalks; *Per.* i. 4. 26, "Whose men and dames so *jetted* and adorned." The word is from *O. F. jeter*, to cast, hurl, fling about; and, when used of the person, means to fling about the limbs in a swaggering manner: **bonnet**, head-dress; now used in such a sense only of the Scotch Highland cap; that worn by yeomen of the guard is round in shape, made of black velvet, with a gold band above the brim.

l. 23. **habit**, manner of dress, fashion,

ll. 24, 5. **yeoman of the guard**, more commonly known as a "beefeater"; formerly an attendant on the person of the sovereign, now one of the subordinate attendants at the Tower of London.

l. 27. **leave...expanded**, *i.e.* so that its full breadth can be seen.

P. 23, l. 2. **the Tilt-yard**, a wide open space in front of the Horse Guards, once the tilting-yard (or place where tournaments were held) of St. James's Palace; **Whitehall**, formerly a royal palace, occupying almost the whole space between Charing Cross and Westminster on one side, and between St. James's Park and the Thames on the other. Part of the palace was burnt down in 1691, and nearly the whole of the remainder was destroyed in the same way in 1697.

ll. 4, 5. **he shivered...pieces**, *i.e.* the lance of his adversary broke into several pieces when it came in contact with his coat of mail, or his shield.

ll. 5, 6. **look you...manner**, as he says this, Sir Roger imitates the action of his ancestor in the tournament.

ll. 6, 7. **came...target**, forced his way right up to his adversary, thrusting his shield aside (so that he was able to put his arm round him and lift him on to his horse); **target**, a diminutive of *large*, originally



meant a small shield, buckler; the present sense of the word, a mark to fire at, is from the resemblance of such a mark to a shield.

l. 8. **pommel**, projecting rim in front of a saddle.

l. 9. **in that manner...over**, completed his course or career down the whole length of the lists, carrying his adversary in triumph on his horse: **rid**, an old preterite of to *ride*.

ll. 10, 1. **with an air...enemy**, showing by his manner that he did this not in order to hold up his adversary to ridicule, but to carry out the rules prescribed for tournaments.

l. 13. **a gallery**, in which sat the "queen of beauty," whose task it was to award the prizes in a tournament to the victorious combatant: **their mistress**, she who was the object of love to both of them; she whom each wished to win as his bride.

ll. 14, 5. **let him down...insolence**, in helping his adversary to alight on the ground from his uncomfortable position, he showed a praiseworthy courtesy to his vanquished foe, and at the same time an air of triumph such as might be excused in one who had performed so remarkable an exploit.

l. 16. **the coffee-house**, Mann's Tilt-yard Coffee-house, still standing early in the nineteenth century. The coffee-houses of those days were the forerunners of the modern clubs.

l. 18. **You are to know**, as we now say, "you must know," *i.e.* I wish you to know.

ll. 18, 9. **a military genius**, one skilled in all the arts of war and war-like exercises.

l. 20. **the bass-viol**, a fashionable musical instrument, also called the *viol-da-gamba*, *gamba* being the Italian for *leg.* and the instrument when played upon being held between the legs.

l. 21. **basket-hilt sword**, a "basket-hilt" was one made of narrow plates of steel curved into the shape of a basket, and serving as a protection to the hand. The form is that in use in the swords of the present day, and, made of wicker, in the foils used in single-stick. The older form of hilt was that of a bar of steel at right angles to the blade, but when the thrust, as opposed to the cut, came more into use, that form afforded no protection.

l. 23. **a maid of honour**, one of the ladies who attend upon a queen or princess.

l. 25. **my great.....grandmother**, my ancestress of five generations backward.

l. 26. **gathered**, *sc.* in folds, pleats.

ll. 27, 8. **as if.....drum**, the hooped petticoats of those days projecting at the hips as widely as at the bottom of the dress.

l. 29. **For all...bred**, in spite of her having been bred; a **go-cart**, a circular contrivance on wheels, in the centre of which the child (to be taught to walk) is made to stand up with his feet on the ground,

these necessarily moving as the machine is pushed forward; the resemblance here of the ladies when walking lies in the shortness of their circular petticoats, beneath which their feet and ankles are plainly visible: For all...court, in spite of this lady being brought up in the frivolous atmosphere of court life.

l. 33. **an hasty-pudding**, also called "hasty-poddish," a pudding made of flour or oatmeal stirred into boiling milk or water.

l. 34. **a white-pot**, a dish which appears to have been peculiar to Devonshire. Nares gives the following receipt from a *Closet of Rarities*, 1706:—"Take two quarts of cream, boil in it, in a short time, half an ounce of mace, a piece of cinnamon, and half a nutmeg; then cut a white penny-loaf exceedingly thin, then lay the slices at the bottom of a dish, and cover them with marrow; add likewise a dozen yolks of eggs to the cream, well beaten in rosewater, and sweeten it with a sufficient quantity of sugar; then take out the spices, beat up the cream well, and fill a broad basin in which the bread, raisins, and marrow was laid, and bake it; when it is enough, scrape white sugar on it, and serve it up."

l. 35. **If you please...little**, a confusion of constructions between "please to fall," etc., and "if you please, fall," etc.

P. 24, l. 3. **homely**, plain-looking and countrified in manner **portions**, *sc.* to be given with them by the father at their marriage.

ll. 6, 7. **to come at her**, in his determination to get at her to carry her away: the "mastiffs" of course being set as watches to prevent his entrance to the house, while the "deer-stealers," poachers, apparently attempted to rescue the girl when she was being carried off.

l. 9. **romp**, tomboy, noisy-mannered girl: **was no great matter**, was of no great importance, no great loss; an elliptical expression.

l. 11. **soft**, effeminate, weak natured; so vulgarly an idiot is called a "softy."

l. 12. **slashes**, ornamental openings in parts of the dress in order to show some other material underneath.

ll. 21, 2. **he would sign...on**, he would not be at the trouble of taking off his gloves even when about to sign so important a document as one which conveyed half his estate from his possession.

ll. 26, 7. **by all hands**, on every side; by every one who knew him.

l. 31. **akin**, of kin, related by blood.

ll. 31, 2. **Sir Andrew Freeport**, see p. 7, l. 28.

ll. 34, 5. **made out**, established, proved.

ll. 35, 6. **We winked...time**, the estate being at the time poorly off, we accepted the gift, though secretly ashamed to acknowledge so humble a person as a member of the family.

P. 25, l. 8. **undone**, ruined; it, the act of breaking his word.

l. 10. **as knight of this shire**, member of the House of Commons for the county.

1. 13. **offices, duties.**

1. 22. **such...wealth**, a certain fixed amount of money to be spent upon himself.

1. 34. **the battle of Worcester**; there were two battles of this name that of September 23rd, 1642, in which Prince Rupert was victorious over the Parliamentarians; the other, and more famous one, on September 3rd, 1651, when Cromwell finally defeated Charles II. The latter is meant here.

1. 35. **whim**, fanciful notion.

## ON GHOSTS AND APPARITIONS. No. 110.

P. 26, l. 8. **are shot up**. Here *are* expresses the present state, whereas *have* would express the activity necessary to cause the present state.

1. 9. **rooks and crows**, both birds of the genus *Corvus*, the former the *corvus frugilegus*, the latter the *corvus corone*, though the two names are used indiscriminately in various parts of England.

1. 10. **cawing**, uttering the cry peculiar to these birds, an imitative word to represent the sound.

ll. 14, 5. **feedeth...him**, from *Psalms*, cxlvii. 9, "He giveth to the beast his food and to the young ravens that cry," or in the Prayer-book version, "Who giveth fodder unto the cattle: and feedeth the young ravens that call upon him."

1. 15. **this retirement**, this retired spot.

1. 19. **the butler**, see Essay No. 106, p. 11, l. 27.

1. 29. **most proper**, thoroughly well suited.

P. 27, ll 1, 2. **elder bushes**, the *Sambucus nigra*, a shrub which in old days had an evil reputation both from belief that it was the tree on which Judas hanged himself after betraying Christ, and also from the rank smell of its leaves and the heavy, narcotic, smell of its flowers.

1. 2. **the harbours...birds**, which give shelter to various solitary birds, such as the owl, the raven, etc.

ll. 13, 4. **pours out...it**, adds to its natural gloominess the terrors that belong to darkness.

1. 16. **Locke**, John, the celebrated philosopher, 1632-1704, author of an *Essay Concerning Human Understanding*, *Treatise on Education*, *Treatise on Civil Government*, etc., etc.

1. 21. **goblins**, a kind of mischievous sprite; ultimately through the Latin and the French from Gk. *κίβηλος*, an impudent rogue, a mischievous sprite invoked by rogues.

1. 23. **inculcate**, literally, to tread in, and so to enforce by repeated telling, or by admonitions.

- l. 24. **there**, in the child's mind.
- l. 30. **conspired**, united in producing an effect: occasions of terror, circumstances that occasioned, caused, terror.
- l. 32. **to startle**, to be startled, alarmed; the verb is more commonly used now in a transitive sense.
- P. 28, l. 4. **by that means**, as we should now say, on that account.
- ll. 7, 8. **there went a story**, a story was current.
- l. 15. **exorcised**, purified of evil spirits; the word literally means to drive away by adjuration, and is more commonly used of the evil spirits themselves than of their abode.
- l. 16. **lay**, slept for a night or two.
- l. 19. **I should not...particular**, I should not have dwelt in such detail.
- l. 27. **give myself...mankind**, surrender any doubts I might have to the belief to which mankind in general bears witness.
- l. 32. **Lucretius**, Titus Carus, the celebrated philosophic Roman poet, B.C. 95-52, author of the *De Rerum Natura*, a poem in six books. This work was an attempt to state and develop clearly the leading principles of the Epicurean philosophy, and to show that there is nothing in the history or actual condition of the world which does not admit of explanation without having recourse to the active interposition of divine beings. This theory led him further to maintain, as Addison says, that the soul did not exist separate from the body. The passage here referred to is to be found in bk. iv. 29, etc.
- P. 29, ll. 1, 2. **the matter of fact**, that which he admitted to be something beyond doubt.

### SIR ROGER AT CHURCH. No. 112.

- P. 29, l. 17. **a country Sunday**, a Sunday, spent in the country village.
- l. 18. **the seventh day**. The Jewish Sabbath was the seventh day of the week, but with us Sunday is the first day.
- ll. 18, 9. **only...institution**. For the divine institution of the Sabbath, see *Exodus*, xx. 8-11.
- l. 14. **with their best faces**, in their most cheerful mood.
- ll. 27, 8. **clears away...week**, brushes off that coating of selfishness and roughness of manner which worldly cares and hard labour throw over those in whose lives there is so little diversion or amusement.
- ll. 28-30. **not only...forms**, not only by brightening in their minds their notions of religion which had grown dim in the interval, but by stimulating both the sexes to show themselves at their best.
- l. 31-P. 30, l. 1. **to give them...village**, to make them appear to the best advantage in the eyes of their fellow-villagers.

ll. 1-3. **A country-fellow...Change**, the churchyard on such occasions is to the villager just as good a theatre for the display of his acuteness as the exchange is to the stockbroker or the merchant speculating in the funds or in merchandise. For the Royal Exchange, see note on p. 3, l. 25. The word *Change*, says Murray, *Eng. Dict.*, has "since 1800 been erroneously treated as an abbreviation of *Exchange*, and written '*Change*.'" We now say 'upon *Change*' not 'upon the *Change*,' i.e. we regard the word less as the name of a place than as that of an occupation.

l. 4. **the bell rings**, to summon them to service.

l. 5. **a good churchman**, a steady supporter of all church interests, an upholder of its rights and its sacred customs; a church-man in old days often meant an ecclesiastic.

l. 6. **texts** chosen from the Bible and painted about the walls of the church in illuminated letters.

l. 7. **a handsome pulpit-cloth**. These decorations of the pulpit have now gone much out of fashion; for one reason, that the pulpit is more often made of stone, or marble, instead of wood, and its rich carvings would be hidden by such cloths.

l. 8. **railed in...expense**, erected a railing of wood, iron, brass, etc., in front of the communion-table, or altar, from which the sacrament of the Lord's Supper, the Eucharist, is celebrated. "In the Church of England, the application of the terms 'communion-table' and 'altar' respectively to the 'holy-table' of the Prayer-book, depends more or less on the views held as to the nature of the Communion or Office" (Murray, *Eng. Dict.*), i.e. according as the sacrament is looked upon as a sacrifice or merely as an act of communion with God. In Addison's day the word 'altar' would have been used only by Catholics or by members of the extreme High Church.

l. 12. **a hassock**, a stuffed mat for kneeling on. "The original signification of the word," says Skeat, "is 'sedg-y,' the form being adjectival.—W. *hesg-og*, sedgy, from *hesg*, s. pl. *sedges*."

l. 16. **value themselves**, pride themselves upon the correctness of their singing.

l. 21. **surprised...sermon**, suddenly overcome for a while by sleep at sermon time, during the sermon; for the omission of the definite article after prepositions in adverbial phrases see, Abb. § 90.

l. 23. **nodding**, *sc.* while in a doze.

l. 25. **particularities**, peculiarities, oddities.

l. 26. **the singing psalms**, psalms for singing, as contrasted with that portion of the Psalms of David appointed for daily service, which in Addison's day were read by the priest, though now generally chanted by the choir; the phrase *singing-psalms* does not of course mean psalms that sing, but as in 'a labouring day,' 'a lending library,' 'a church going bell,' etc., etc., the word in *-ing* is a verbal noun.

ll. 28, 9. is pleased...devotion, deeply feels the prayer which he has been following or repeating after the priest.

l. 35. to mind...about, to take care what he is doing, how he is behaving.

P. 31, ll. 1, 2. kicking...diversion, amusing himself by idly knocking his heels together and thus diverting the attention of the congregation.

l. 5. not polite enough, not of sufficiently polished manners.

l. 8. foils, things that by contrast set off or enhance the beauty of that with which they are contrasted; literally, leaves, from Lat. *folia*, pl. of *folium*, a leaf, but used especially of a leaf of tin-foil placed beneath a precious stone in the setting of a ring, etc., to give it increased brilliancy.

l. 10. As soon as ...nobody. The phrase "as soon as" is more usually followed by a positive, not a negative like "nobody."

l. 12. the chancel, the east-end of the church; so called because it was formerly fenced off by a screen with openings in it, from Low Lat. *cancellus*, a latticed window. In former days the people of the higher rank among the congregation usually had their pews, or their seats, in the chancel.

l. 16. which, this inquiry after the absentees.

ll. 18, 9. a catechising-day, a day when the children are put through the Church catechism; see note on l. 26 above.

l. 22. a flitch, a side of an animal, especially a share of a pig. The word literally means a *slice*.

l. 26. incumbent, holder of the office (of clerk); a term more commonly used of the holder of a church living, a rector, or vicar; from Lat. *incumbere*, to rest upon, remain in.

l. 27. it, *sc.* the office of clerk. This office, the duties of which were to lead the responses, to say 'amen' at the end of each prayer, to give out the hymns, and generally to attend upon the minister, has now been well nigh reformed out of existence.

ll. 28, 9. The fair understanding...chaplain, the friendly terms on which Sir Roger and his chaplain live, a state of things due to each recognizing the good points of the other.

l. 33. is always...squire, is always attacking the squire; the squire is the chief landed proprietor of a village, and the word is a doublet of *esquire*, literally, a shield-bearer, then one entitled to a coat of arms.

l. 36. tithe-stealers, defrauders in the amount of tithes due to the parson; tithes are the tenth part of the produce of the land as offered to the clergy. Originally the payment was made in kind, but this had since been commuted for a payment in money made according to a periodical valuation of the land.

P. 32, l. 1. his order, *sc.* the priestly order or class to which he belongs.

ll. 2, 3. **his patron**, the squire who has the giving of the 'living or benefice held by the parson.

l. 5. **this half year**, for the last half year, *i.e.* for a long while past; the expression being an indefinite one.

l. 6. **mend his manners**, show more respect to religion.

ll. 6, 7. **pray...congregation**, pray for him by name in church as being an unrepentant sinner.

l. 9. **are very fatal...people**, have a very evil effect upon the lower classes.

l. 12. **to regard**, to pay heed to.

ll. 14, 5. **of five hundred a year**, in those days a very large income, the purchasing power of money being so much greater than at present.

## HIS ACCOUNT OF HIS DISAPPOINTMENT IN LOVE.

No. 113.

P. 32, l. 26. **settled upon**. "Sir Roger did not mean that any part of his estate had been literally settled upon the widow, but that the idea of her was so inseparably associated with a certain avenue that he could not see 'a sprig of any bough of the whole walk' without reflecting upon her severity" (Salmon).

l. 27. **the perverse widow** has by some been supposed to be a certain Mrs. Bovey who died in 1726. There is a monument to her memory by Gibbs, the architect, in the nave of Westminster Abbey "with," says Hare, "an astonishing epitaph."

P. 33, l. 2. **by that custom**, owing to my having been accustomed to do so.

ll. 5, 6. **to carve her name**, a frequent fancy of old with fond lovers; cp. A. Y. L. iii. 2.

l. 7. **to attempt**, as that they attempt.

l. 27. **sheriff of the county**, the office of sheriff is an expensive one, he having to give various social entertainments, to maintain a body of javelin men (supposed to be guards for the judges when on circuit), to provide carriages for the judges when going in procession, etc., etc. It is therefore imposed only on wealthy men, and especially on landed proprietors of good standing like Sir Roger.

l. 30. **my figure, &c.** in his sheriff's uniform.

ll. 33, 4. **at the head...county**, riding in the judge's procession when entering or leaving the county, and on their visits to different parts of it, at the head of all the chief men of that county.

l. 34. **music bands**, such as accompany judges on circuit.

l. 35. **well bitted**, with bits in their mouths that enabled the driver to control them to the best advantage by pulling them up sharply if



necessary, by causing them to toss their heads with impatience thus showing their mettle, etc.

P. 34, ll. 1, 2. **the assizes**, sessions of courts of justice; from O.F. *assis*, an assembly of judges, a past participle, O.F. *asseoir*, to sit at or near.

l. 4. **commanding**, imperious looking.

l. 5. **who was born...her**, whose beauty and fascinations were so great as to drive all who looked upon her mad with love.

l. 7. **such...uneasiness**, such a graceful, bewitching air of nervousness.

ll. 8, 9. **recovered...another**, looked first towards one person and then, as her nervousness abated, towards another.

l. 10. **something...encountered**, a look of pensive interest in the eyes of all towards whom she turned her gaze; **wistful**, eager, earnest, attentive, pensive, is probably a corruption of *wishful*.

l. 11. **with a murrain to her**, plague upon her! **murrain** is properly an infectious disease among cattle; cp. *Temp.* iii. 2. 88, "A *murrain* on your monster, and the devil take your fingers!"

ll. 12-4. **like a great...calf**, like a great idiot suddenly smitten by a woman's looks.

ll. 16, 7. **was become...widow**, had fallen head over ears in love with the handsome widow, and was ready to do her bidding in any matter however extravagant.

l. 20. **little billets**, little notes of points which she wished him to press; **billet** is in itself a diminutive of *bill*.

l. 21. **a pretty confusion**, much the same as "a pretty uneasiness" above, and in both cases probably hinting that this appearance of sensitiveness was put on for the occasion.

l. 23. **was prejudiced...favour**, had made up its mind, even before the evidence had been all heard and the counsel on both sides had stated their arguments, to give a verdict for her.

ll. 23, 4. **the next...husband**, i.e. her adversary in the case.

ll. 30, 1. **indulge themselves...consequences**, but do not allow themselves to be drawn into love or marriage.

ll. 34, 5. **far gone...friendship**, one who finds an excessive pleasure in the making of friends; "far gone" is generally used of excessive indulgence in something foolish and wrong.

P. 35, l. 1. **consequently...love**, sc. by being always ready to remind her of what she has said against that passion.

ll. 5, 6. **the tamest...country**, of course a very left-handed compliment.

ll. 7, 8. **who thought...me**, who in so doing thought he was making me the butt of his witty banter, thought he was "taking a rise out of me," in the language of slang.

ll. 9, 10. **new-paired**, took much trouble in matching my pairs of carriage horses, so that they should be exactly of the same height, colour etc.

l. 10. **to be bitted**, to be made accustomed to the bit, so as to answer it readily.

l. 11. **to throw...well**, to move with a good action.

l. 16. **and yet command respect**, and yet to keep you in sufficient awe to prevent your giving away to passionate declaration of your love.

ll. 20-3. **If you will not...admiration**, if you check her in one direction by your insensibility to a certain way she has of using her eyes to fascinate you, and to the skilful manner in which she displays her beauty to the best advantage, she will attack you on another side, and by revealing to you her truest charms, those of intellect and character, she will inspire you with a feeling of respectful wonder in the place of passionate love.

ll. 23, 4. **the whole woman**, her complete self as seen in her physical, mental, and moral, excellences.

l. 26. **form**, outward beauty.

l. 33. **discovered**, revealed.

l. 35-P. 36, l. 2. **This she no sooner...them**, the moment she saw with what awe her personal appearance had struck me, she took advantage of my condition to further subdue me by entering upon a discourse concerning love and honour, and the way in which those feelings are treated by those who are mere pretenders to them and those who enshrine them in their hearts and show by their actions the reality of their worship.

l. 5. **happy**, fortunate.

l. 7. **in the last confusion**, utterly at a loss what answer to make.

ll. 9-11. **"I am very glad...speak,"** thus adding to his confusion by a mock respect for the deliberation with which, from his silence, he seemed to ponder the question.

l. 12. **kept their countenances**, refrained from smiling, though inwardly they were laughing at my confusion.

l. 17. **This barbarity...distance**, this cruelty has always deterred me from venturing to speak of the love that was in my heart.

l. 20. **the sphynx**. a she-monster represented in Egyptian art by the figure of a lion without wings in a recumbent attitude, the upper part of the body being that of a human being; in Grecian art by the winged body of a lion, the breast and upper part being the figure of a woman. She is said to have proposed a riddle to the Thebans, and to have murdered all who were unable to guess it. The riddle was as follows: "A being with four feet has two feet and three feet, and only one voice; but its feet vary, and when it has most it is weakest." Oedipus, King of Thebes, solved the riddle by saying that it was man, who in infancy crawls upon all fours, in manhood stands erect upon two feet, and in old

age supports his tottering legs with a staff. The Sphinx, enraged at the solution of the riddle, threw herself down from the rock on which she sat and perished: by posing her, by placing her in a difficulty from which she is unable to extricate herself.

ll. 21, 2. and that...her, and if it were at all possible to talk to her, *i.e.* if everyone who attempted it did not find himself driven to silence by her superior wit and wisdom.

ll. 28, 9. at a public table, what in those days was called an 'ordinary,' a public dinner where each person paid his share. These were very fashionable resorts in the times of James I. and subsequent reigns.

l. 30. tansy, a favourite dish in the seventeenth century, the chief ingredients of which were eggs, cream, herbs, and spices; the word is also the name of an aromatic plant used in cookery and medicine, and comes ultimately from Gk. *άθανασία*, immortality. The fact of the widow's publicly helping Sir Roger to some of this dish was a mark of favour which he remembers and records with pride.

l. 35. grow irregular, lose myself, wander out of all rule, all moderation.

l. 36. unconcerned, unmoved.

P. 37, ll. 4, 5. that we might...company, *sc.* by meeting whom he would be diverted from the subject of the widow.

l. 9. Martial, M. Valerius, a Latin Poet, born in Bilbilis in Spain, A.D. 43, died about A.D. 104; celebrated for his Epigrams.

l. 10. dum tacet hanc loquitur, even when silent talks of her, *i.e.* shows by his behaviour that he is ever thinking of her.

## ON THE SHAME AND FEAR OF POVERTY.

No. 114.

P. 38, l. 1. a pretending behaviour, the appearance without reality.

l. 5. the glass was taken, wine was drunk.

l. 9. warm, excited with the wine he had drunk.

l. 10. fuddled, stupefied with wine; obsolete except as a colloquialism.

l. 11. humour, frame of mind.

l. 17. is dipped, burdened by mortgages, involved in debt: is eating...usury, is in the process of being consumed by the heavy interest to be paid upon borrowed money.

ll. 18, 9. His proud stomach, his pride; stomach was of old used for disposition, inclination, and also for pride, arrogance, anger, courage, etc.

l. 19. at the cost...nights, though the consequence of it is that he cannot sleep at night.

l. 21. **this canker**, this borrowing which eats into his fortune as the canker-worm eats into the blossoms of flowers; **canker** is a doublet of *cancer*.

l. 21, 2. **rather...said**, rather than allow it to be said, as it would be said if he sold part of his property.

l. 25, 6. **served ..unnatural**, set upon the table in a very different way from what would be the case if such plenty were the ordinary course in the house.

l. 26, 7. **the master's...home**, the master does not give that attention to the ordering of his table that he would do if his mind were not engaged upon other matters, *sc.* his debts and difficulties.

l. 28, 9. **but a covered indigence**, an indigence which it is sought to veil by an appearance of profusion.

l. 30, **attends the table**, belongs to, is the usual accompaniment of, dinners, etc., given by one, etc.

l. 30, 1. **lives within compass**, does not exceed his income.

l. 31. **libertine way**, careless freedom of behaviour; the word, says Trench, was "applied at first to certain heretical sects, and intended to mark the licentious *liberty* of their creed"; from Lat. *libertinus*, of or belonging to a freed man, an enfranchised slave.

l. 36. **an extent of country**, a wide area of country.

P. 39, l. 1. **personate**, behave as though he possessed.

l. 2. **of all others**, for this Greek construction, see Abbott, § 409, on the confusion of two constructions in superlatives; here the confusion is between "the most unpardonable vanity of all," and "a more unpardonable vanity than all others."

l. 6. **soft**, lenient.

l. 11. **Laertes**, in Grecian history, was king of Ithaca, while Irus, whose real name was Arnaeus, was a beggar of the same country. Here the two names are used for the rich man and the comparatively poor man.

l. 14. **he would save ..pound**, "the Land Tax. If Laertes sold six thousand pounds' worth of his land he could pay off his debt, and the tax on the unprofitable part of his estate would fall on the purchaser" (Salmon).

l. 16. **easier**, more comfortable.

l. 17. **a fellow of yesterday**, one never heard of till the other day, a fellow with no ancestry to boast of.

l. 22. **of so near affinity**, so closely similar in character.

l. 28. **appear**, *sc.* in public.

l. 29. **attend his labourers**, in order to see that they do their work.

l. 35. **stock-jobbing**, speculating in shares in the stock-market, the Exchange.

P. 40, l. 3. **to command**, to ensure.

l. 4. **order, rank.**

l. 8. **out of nature**, out of the regular order of nature, contrary to nature.

l. 10. **Cowley**, Abraham, 1618-1667; his best known works are a collection of poems called *The Mistress*, and his *Essays*.

l. 12. **considerable men**, men of mark and reputation.

ll. 13, 4. **the elegant...works**, Bishop Sprat, in 1688.

l. 16. **amiable**, lovable in the opinion of those who read this account of his character.

l. 17. **bears...poverty**, is looked upon as poverty.

ll. 17, 8. **with Mr. Cowley's great vulgar**, with those vulgar-minded rich men described by Cowley; **great vulgar**, an expression used in his paraphrase of Hor. *Odes*, iii. 2.

l. 25. **point to himself**, lay down for himself, fix for himself.

l. 26. **to exceed, &c.** in acquiring for his own use.

ll. 26, 7. **He might...expectation**, in this way he might persuade himself to be of a contented mind even if he never succeeded in acquiring the amount which he had fixed as his limit for personal enjoyment.

ll. 30, 1. **restless men**, men never satisfied with what they had acquired, but impatient to add to their store.

l. 32. **this would...compass**, to do so would be to be guided by right reason, not to beat about aimlessly like a vessel without a compass.

ll. 35, 6. **a mechanic being**, the existence of a soulless, mindless creature.

P. 41, l. 1. **acquired**, as opposed to natural, inborn.

ll. 4, 5. **so abstracted...world**, so far removed in its desires from those things that mankind generally has an appetite for.

l. 8. **mansions**, abodes; a 'mansion' in its ordinary modern sense means a large and imposing house, but the original sense is merely a place of abode, from Lat. *mansio*, from *manere*, to dwell.

l. 9. **at this present writing**, at the moment of my writing this.

## LABOUR AND EXERCISE. No. 115.

P. 41, l. 21. **rises**, arises, is prompted by.

l. 26. **glands**, cells in the body which secrete animal fluid.

l. 30. **tendons**, hard strong cords by which muscles are attached to bones: **veins**, tubes conveying blood to the heart, **arteries**, tubes conveying blood from the heart.

P. 42, ll. 4, 5. **without considering...anatomy**, without going into the minute details of anatomy.

l. 11. **tone**, tension, and hence firmness of structure: **ferments** the humours, stirs into a glow the watery particles in the bodily system.

ll. 12, 3. **throws off redundancies**, evaporates what is superfluous to health.

l. 22. **the spleen**, not here the organ of that name, a spongy gland above the kidney, but the morose, melancholy, frame of mind supposed by the ancients to be due to that organ.

l. 23. **sedentary tempers**, we should rather say "sedentary habits," or tempers (*i.e.* moods), produced by a sedentary life.

l. 24. **vapours**, capricious fancies.

l. 27. **proper**, well adapted.

l. 35. **valuable**, worthy of attainment.

P. 43, ll. 3, 4. **work them up**, put them into the best shape.

l. 4. **laboured**, tilled with labour; a use almost obsolete now.

l. 10. **condition**, rank in life.

l. 29. **patched with noses**, ornamented with the snouts of foxes fastened to them here and there.

ll. 32, 3. **which cost...riding**, in hunting which he spent about fifteen hours in the saddle; the animal, it may be presumed, having given him many runs before it was killed.

l. 36. **The perverse widow**, the widow who so obstinately refused to marry him; see p. 6, l. 7, etc.

P. 44, ll. 1, 2. **was the death...foxes**, *sc.* by driving him in his disappointment to give himself up more eagerly than ever to fox-hunting.

l. 3. **his amours**, his efforts to win her love; nowadays the phrase would mean his various love affairs.

l. 6. **left**, gave up.

l. 7. **sits**, here a technical term used of a hare when couching in her "form" or "seat"; cp. Somerville, *The Chase*, i. 25, "so the wise hares Oft quit their Seats, lest some more curious eyes Should mark their haunts."

l. 12. **accommodated**, suited.

l. 13. **Sydenham**, Thomas, 1624-1689, a celebrated physician and fellow of All Souls' College, Oxford.

l. 17. **Medicina Gymnastica**, the medicine of healthy exercise.

l. 19. **a dumb bell**, a heavy weight used for exercising the muscles, so called because the two spherical ends resemble the clapper of a bell.

l. 24. **whilst I am ringing**, while I am going through my bell exercise.

l. 33. **boxing**, fighting with the fists; a *box* in this sense is a blow, from Dan. *bask*, a slap.

ll. 35, 6. **about nothing**, about the most trivial subjects.

1. 36. **this method...shadows**, which he implies they are doing in another sense in their controversies.

P. 45, l. 2. **uneasy**, troublesome.

1. 3. **a compound...body**, cp. ii. *H. iv.* l. 2. 8, "the brain of this *fortiori* compounded clay, man."

## A HUNTING SCENE WITH SIR ROGER. No. 116.

P. 45, l. 17. **the Bastile**, originally a castle in Paris, built by Charles IV., King of France, in 1369, for the defence of the capital against the English; afterwards used as a state prison. It was destroyed in July, 1789, by the revolutionary mob.

1. 20. **figures**, *sc.* geometrical.

P. 46, l. 1. **coveys**, broods, families; sometimes used of grouse ptarmigan, etc., as well as of partridges, and not uncommonly in a figurative sense. From *L. cubare*, *It. covare*, *Fr. couvrir*, to sit, incubate, hatch.

1. 3. **hair**, *i.e.* horse-hair.

1. 6. **vermin**, though more commonly used of small obnoxious insects and animals, such as fleas, lice, rats, mice, is also applied to foxes, badgers, weasels, etc.; ultimately from *Lat. vermis*, a worm.

1. 14. **managed**, trained, broken in.

11. 15, 6. **stone-horse**, stallion.

1. 16. **staked himself**, killed himself by alighting, when jumping, upon a sharp-pointed stake, such as are often used in fences.

11. 18, 9. **to keep...action**, as a means of exercise.

1. 19. **beagles**, a small variety of hound, tracking by scent, formerly used in hunting hares, but now superseded by the harrier, which sometimes takes the name of beagle.

1. 20. **stop-hounds**, Salmon quotes Wills: "We infer from Blaine's 'Rural Sports' that when one of these hounds found the scent, he gave notice of his good fortune by deliberately squatting to impart more effect to his deep tones, and to get wind for a fresh start." **want**, lack.

11. 21, 2. **deepness of their mouths**, depth and volume of voice when "giving tongue" in hunting; for mouths, in this sense, cp. *H. V.* ii. 4. 70, "for coward dogs Most spend their mouths when what they seem to threaten Runs far before them."

1. 23. **cry**, pack; so in the quotation from *M. N. D.* a little below.

11. 23, 4. **makes...concert**, results in a complete harmony of the various notes.

1. 24. **nice**, particular, fastidious.



1. 29. **bass**, the deepest male voice, or lowest tones of a musical instrument, which sound this part; then a man who possesses such a voice: a **counter-tenor**, or *alto*, a part higher in pitch than the tenor, sung by a high male voice; then a man who possesses such a voice. The humour of the passage consists in the application to hounds of terms usually applied to men.

1. 34. **the Spartan kind**, the Spartan breed of hounds was from early days a very famous one.

1. 35. **so flu'd**, with flews like those of the Spartan breed; "flews" are the large, dependent chaps of a hound: **so sanded**, of the same sandy colour, a colour which, says Steevens, "is one of the true denotements of a bloodhound."

1. 36. **With ears...dew**, *i.e.* so long that they almost touch the ground.

P. 47, l. 1. **dew-lap'd**, with dew-laps as broad as those, etc.: the *dew-lap* is the loose flesh hanging from the throats of cattle, and is so called from its lapping up the dew as they graze.

1. 2. **match'd...bells**, in former days the greatest attention was paid to the musical quality of the cry of a pack of hounds, and sweetness of cry, loudness of cry, and depth of cry were obtained by frequent crossing of breeds.

1. 3. **Each under each**, each subordinate to the other in a regular musical scale.

ll. 3, 4. **A cry...to**, a more tuneful cry was never answered by huntsman encouraging hounds.

1. 6. **out**, *sc.* hunting.

1. 7. **pad**, pad-horse, roadster, horse for riding on roads; from *Du. pad*, a path.

1. 10. **benevolence**, good-will; the original sense of the word; now more commonly used of acts or behaviour practically exhibiting that feeling.

1. 16. **to beat**, *sc.* for the quarry.

1. 24. **puss**, the hunter's term for a hare; in ordinary language 'a cat.

1. 26. **put them...scent**, "laid them on" (or formerly, "in") in hunting terms, *i.e.* showed them the line taken by the hare, for them to follow by scent.

1. 30. **Stole away**, the huntsman's cry when the fox or hare breaks cover on seeing that the hounds have viewed him or her, as a hare is usually styled.

ll. 34, 5. **immediately...her**, put more than a mile between himself and the hounds, having got away without being seen.

P. 48, ll. 6, 7. **unravelling...made**, following by scent the whole line she had taken in all her twists and turns: **her doubles**, her doubling back upon the line she had first taken. Cp. Somerville, *The Chase*, 1725, "The puzzling pack unravel wile by wile, Maze within maze"; and

again, "with step revers'd She forms the *doubling* maze," though in the latter case she is only attempting to blind the scent when retiring to her "form," or bed.

l. 11. **at a fault**, unable to pick up the scent.

l. 12. **opened**, "gave tongue," to show that he had hit off the scent.

l. 13. **cry**, pack; as above, l. 23: **raw**, new to the chase, not thoroughly trained: **who was...liar**, had been repeatedly known to have falsely pretended that he had picked up the scent.

l. 16. **squatted**, sat down trying to hide herself; a hunting term in regard to a hare.

l. 17. **put up again**, roused from her hiding place.

l. 26. **took a large field**, endeavoured to make her way over, etc.

l. 29. **chiding**, noise of the hounds giving tongue; cp. *M. N. D.* iv.

l. 120, "never did I hear Such gallant *chiding*."

l. 35. **spent**, exhausted.

l. 36-P. 49, l. 1. **threw down his pole**, as a signal to end the chase: possibly an imitation of the custom at combats in a tournament when the president threw down his warder, or truncheon, as an intimation that the combat was to proceed no further; cp. *s.g. R. II. i. 3. 117*, "Stay, the king hath thrown his warder down." The pole was that used by the huntsman in taking leaps, he being on foot.

l. 5. **opening**, see above, l. 12.

ll. 16, 7. **monsieur Paschal**, or Pascal, Blaise, 1623-1662, a celebrated French philosopher and mathematician, author of *Letters Provinciales*, in opposition to the Jesuits, and *Pensées*, a work published after his death.

l. 29. **altogether...woods**, not literally but figuratively; gives himself up entirely to sport, without a thought for any more serious occupation.

P. 50, l. 1. **habit of body**, bodily condition.

ll. 12, 3. **the following...Dryden**, the passage is from an epistle "To my honoured kinsman, John Dryden," ll. 73, 4, and ll. 90-5.

l. 14. **made**, called into existence.

l. 20. **unbought**, that cannot be bought; for this use of the passive participle, see Abb. § 375.

l. 23. **his work**, *sc.* the human frame.

## ON WITCHCRAFT—STORY OF MOLL WHITE. No. 117.

P. 50. l. 27. **neuter**, neutral: **engaging his assent**, binding himself by a pledge of assenting.

ll. 28, 9. **Such a hovering...determination**, the figure is that of a butterfly, bee, bird, etc., poising itself before alighting on a flower, the ground, etc.; **determination**, fixed opinion.

P. 51, l. 1. **that are indifferent to us**, in which we have no strong interest.

l. 4. **relations**, stories of occurrences.

ll. 5, 6. **Norway and Lapland**, countries in the literature of which stories of witches, and other beings invested with supernatural powers, abound. In both countries the witches and sorcerers were, among other things, credited with the power of giving or selling winds to those who wished to cross the seas.

l. 7. **particular**, individual.

l. 8. **commerce**, dealings.

l. 11. **abound...relations**, are those among whom these stories are chiefly current.

l. 17. **to suspend my belief**, to maintain the "hovering faith" "which refuses to settle upon any determination."

l. 28. **at large**, in full.

l. 30. **applied herself**, appealed, made application; the phrase in this sense is now obsolete.

l. 31. **Otway**, Thomas, 1651-1685, a dramatic poet, author of *The Orphan* (from which these lines are an extract), *Venice Preserved*, etc. Said to have died of starvation.

l. 32. **close**, narrow.

l. 33. **double**, her body being so bowed.

l. 35. **scalding rheum**, hot salt tears; **rheum**, is the humid and salt matter excreted from the eyes, from Gk. *ρῆμα*, a flow, flux; cp. *Hamlet*.  
ii. 2. 529, "threatening the flames With bisson **rheum**": **gall'd**, inflamed, irritated.

l. 36. **Cold palsy**, shivering fits due to the palsy; **palsy** is a doublet and contracted form of *paralysis*.

P. 52, l. 1. **crooked**, bent, rounded, by age.

l. 2. **an old strip'd hanging**, an old curtain, or furniture covering, coloured in stripes.

l. 3. **carcase**, properly a dead body, and literally a shell, the dead body being merely the shell which once contained the soul; here used of one who was more like a corpse than a living body.

l. 4. **of a piece**, uniform, composed of the same material throughout.

l. 5. *weeds*, covering, dress; from A.S. *weod*, a garment, in which sense it is frequent in Elizabethan English; so we still speak of 'widows' weeds,' meaning the head-dress worn by widows.

l. 7. *And seem'd...wretchedness*, and seemed to be typical of the various kinds of woes with which she was laden.

l. 11. *that her lips...motion*, i.e. as if she were constantly muttering charms, imprecations, etc.; the palsy being really the cause of their constant twitching.

ll. 12-4. *a switch...miles*, switches being among the things that witches were supposed to mount when traversing the air; broomsticks were also a favourite vehicle in such airy flights, while for crossing the seas they made use of sieves, eggshells, cockleshells, and the like.

ll. 15, 6. *in the figure of a cross*, it being believed that those possessed of evil spirits could not pass over such an obstacle; the cross, the emblem of Christianity, being used to baffle and lay such spirits.

l. 18. *was saying...backwards*, which witches and sorcerers were supposed to do in order to counteract the effect of prayer.

l. 22. *ring*, resound, be full of.

l. 23, *palmed*, imposed upon her, falsely attributed to her; literally, thrust in to her hand.

ll. 23-5. *If the dairy-maid...churn*, if the cream is longer than usual in turning into butter, Moll White is suspected of being in the neighbourhood of the churn and making the dairy-maid's efforts of no avail; cp. *M. N. D.* ii. l. 37, "are you not he... That...sometimes labour in the quern, And bootless make the breathless housewife churn...?" said of the sprite Robin Goodfellow, or Puck.

ll. 25, 6. *If a horse...back*, it being believed that witches often took horses out of the stable at night and used them for long journeys.

ll. 26-8. *If a hare...White*, another belief was that witches often took the form of animals pursued by hunters and eluded the speed of the fleetest hounds or suddenly vanished from sight. Various tricks of the kind are described in Johnson's *Sad Shepherd*.

P. 53. l. 1. *an old broom-staff*, see note on ll. 12-14.

l. 3. *a tabby cat*, cats were among the familiars or demons supposed to attend the summons of witches, etc., or to dwell with them; *tabby*, brindled, or diversified in colour like the markings on *tabby*, a kind of waved silk; cp. *Macb.* iv. l. 1, "Thrice the *brinded cat* hath mew'd"; said by the First Witch.

ll. 4, 5. *lay under...report*, was spoken as evilly of, said to be as bad.

l. 6. *to accompany...shape*, witches being said often to take the shape of a cat when they did not wish to be recognized. Old treatises tell us that a witch was permitted to take on her a cat's body nine times. As to a cat's being a favourite with witches, the story is that when Galinthias, the nurse of Alcmena, outwitted Juno in regard to the birth of Hercules, the angry gooddness changed her into a cat, when Hecate,

the presiding deity of sorcery and witchcraft, took pity on her and made her her attendant.

l. 10. **concerned**, troubled in mind.

ll. 13, 4. **a justice of peace**, since she was liable, in case of any acts of sorcery being brought home to her, to be punished by him in that capacity; see note on p. 2, l. 8.

ll. 14, 5. **never...cattle**, that being among the iniquities attributed to witches; cp. *e.g.* Middleton's *Witch*, i. 2. 52, where Hecate says, "Seven of their young pigs I've bewitched, Of the last litter."

l. 16. **a bounty**, a present of money.

l. 19. **spit pins**. Among other instances of malevolence attributed to witches was that of causing the objects of their hate to swallow pins, crooked nails, cinders, refuse, etc., and bewitched persons frequently fell into violent fits during which they vomited needles, pins, stones, nails, etc.: **the nightmare** was in ancient belief an incubus that visited people in sleep, and by sitting heavily on their chests caused them to dream horrible dreams; cp. *Lear*, iii. 4. 126, "S. Withold footed thrice the old; He met the *night-mare* and her nine-fold." The word is now used only of a horrible dream, and the incubus that produces the oppression on the chest is indigestion. The element—*mare*, says Skeat, is from the root *mar*, to pound, crush.

l. 20. **tossing her into a pond**. Among the various methods of testing a witch was the ordeal of swimming. The victim was stripped naked and crossbound, the right thumb to the left toe, and the left thumb to the right toe; and in this condition she was cast into a pond or river, in which it was held impossible for her, if guilty, to sink. Other experiments with the same object were the weighing of the witch against Church Bibles, when, if the latter were found to outweigh the former, her guilt was clearly proved; or she was required to say the Lord's Prayer, inability to do which was an equally clear proof; or she was forced to weep, the popular conviction being that such creatures could shed no more than three tears, and those only from the left eye; or she was tried by pricking her with pins, or tortured on a stool, etc., etc.

l. 24. **staggered with the reports**, so much impressed by the stories told him as to doubt whether she was not really a witch.

l. 26. **bound her...sessions**, compelled her to give security for her appearance at the county sessions when they should come on.

l. 27. **much ado**, much trouble, difficulty.

ll. 30, 1. **a Moll White**, an old woman like Moll White in circumstance and character.

l. 31. **to doat**, to become foolish with age.

l. 32. **grew...parish**, have to be supported by the parish rates. Of course the suggestion is that the parishioners would be glad to get rid of her in any way, rather than pay for her maintenance.

ll. 32, 3. *she is...witch*, people declare that she is a witch.

ll. 33, 4. *and fills...dreams*, and all manner of wild stories are told in proof of her being given to witchcraft.

P. 54, l. 1. *secret...familiarities*, *sc.* with the devil.

l. 5. *decrepit*, worn out, broken down, by old age; from the Latin *decrepitus*, that makes no noise; hence creeping about noiselessly like an old man.

## SIR ROGER'S REFLECTIONS ON THE WIDOW. No. 118.

P. 54, l. 11. *struck out*, formed by clearing away the trees and leveling the ground.

l. 24. *sacred to the widow*, see p. 32, l. 28.

l. 25. *of all others*, see note on p. 39, l. 2.

P. 55, ll. 1, 2. *She has that...offend*, cp. p. 35, ll. 24-27, 'there is that dignity in her aspect,...that if her form makes you hope, her merit makes you fear.'

l. 5. *perverse*, see p. 32, l. 27.

ll. 7, 8. *my heart...esteem*, my feelings of respect prevent my giving vent to emotions of passion.

l. 10. *salute*, kiss; literally, wish health to.

l. 13. *of being obliged*, of being laid under an obligation to any one.

l. 18. *to set a mark upon*, to mark as being creatures to be feared and avoided.

ll. 21, 2. *have in their custody*, have to watch over lest they should act unprudently.

l. 22. *a great fortune*, a rich heiress.

l. 23. *danger of surprisings*, danger of being suddenly entrapped into an unfortunate marriage.

l. 27. *the ward*, she whom the confidant has to guard.

ll. 28, 9. *her confidant...distance*, *you will be sure to find* that her confidant treats you with an air of reserve, such as will check your advances.

ll. 32, 3. *except...sexes*, except that their marriage is with one of their own sex.

l. 34. *conduct*, guidance and control.

P. 56, ll. 3, 4. *is addressed to*, paid court to: *presented*, solicited by presents, gifts; neither phrase would be now used.

ll. 10, 1. *in a personated sullenness*, as the very personification of sullen ill-temper.

ll. 12, 3. *master of the game*, huntsman; though perhaps the term includes that of gamekeeper generally.

l. 24. **make away with me**, destroy me; of course in a sense different from that in which the image in the water would be destroyed.

ll. 29, 30. **made...water**, started up as if to plunge into the water.

l. 34. **I thought...yourself**, I knew very well that it was but a pretence you were making of drowning yourself.

ll. 35, 6. **taken your leave of**, bidden a last farewell to, *sc.* in despair of winning Sussan Holiday's love.

P. 57, l. 4. **Kate Willow**, Betty's confidant.

ll. 4, 5. **makes stories...sake**, invents false stories of my actions because she takes a pleasure in my talking with her, though I do so only because she is a confidant of yours, *i.e.* she tries to set you against me, because she would like to win my affections herself.

l. 8. **honest**, pure, chaste.

ll. 12, 3. **and makes me.. condition**, *i.e.* and as she has ever treated her admirers in the same scornful manner as the perverse widow, till now she has ceased to be admired by any, I begin to hope that I shall some day see that widow in the same miserable state.

ll. 13, 4. **her answers**, *sc.* when they talked of love.

l. 15. **valued herself**, prided herself, put an exorbitant value upon, etc.

l. 18. **more discreet**, wiser in the matter of marriage.

l. 20. **make a match**, marry.

l. 21. **hussy**, pert girl, vixen; a shortened form of 'huswife,' which stands for 'housewife,' used in a contemptuous sense; though both here and in "the saucy thing," Sir Roger's contempt is of a good-humoured kind.

ll. 27, 8. **has streaked...softness**, has been the origin of a vein of gentleness running through my whole life; the figure is that of a vein of different colour or consistency running through a block of marble, a bed of quartz, etc., etc.

l. 32. **better motives**, motives nobler in themselves, but not producing so wholesome a result.

l. 34. **well cured**, completely cured.

ll. 34, 5. **between you and me**, *i.e.* I say it quite confidentially.

P. 58, ll. 4, 5. **does...dairies**, *i.e.* to see how the dairymaids are getting on in their making of cream, butter, etc.

l. 5. **reads upon**, studies treatises upon.

ll. 6, 7. **out of books**, *i.e.* her contemplation of the working of "the honey bee" is directed by what she reads in books upon the subject, not by observation of that working as it is in nature.

ll. 7, 8. **the policies of their commonwealth**, for a description of such 'policies,' administrative rule, see *H. V.* i. 2. 187-204, "for so work the honeybees, ...drone."



l. 10. **for all she looks**, in spite of her looking: **innocent**, often used as a substantive in the sense of idiot, one so childish, simple, as to be next door to a fool.

## RURAL MANNERS. No. 119.

P. 58, l. 19. **By manners...morals**, Addison probably says this because the Latin *mores* includes both manners and morals.

l. 23. **article**, particular, matter; literally, a little joint (of the body).

l. 24. **obliging deferences**, amiable civilities, courtesies.

l. 26. **brought up**, introduced.

ll. 29, 30. **mutual complaisance**, interchange of endeavours to please: **conversation**, social intercourse.

P. 59, l. 2. **modish**, fashionable, in accordance with the mode, or fashion, of the time; cp. below, p. 60, l. 10.

ll. 5, 6. **to retrench its superfluities**, to cut down its useless formalities.

l. 7. **carriage**, manner of bearing oneself, deportment.

l. 10. **sit more loose**, a figure from clothing; cp. *Macb.* i. 3. 144-6, "New honours come upon him, like our strange garments, cleave not to their mould But with the aid of use."

l. 11. **an agreeable negligence**, a pleasant informality, neglect of ceremony.

l. 15. **fetch'd themselves up**, brought themselves up to the level of.

l. 16. **but...them**, than the town has discarded those fashions.

l. 17. **the first state of nature**, the manners natural before civilization had made any way in the world.

l. 20. **his excess of good-breeding**, the superabundance of polite formalities which he uses.

ll. 22, 3. **more to do**, more fuss; **to do** in this phrase is used as a quasi substantive, as is *ado*, which is properly an infinitive verb=at do.

l. 29. **could adjust the ceremonial**, could settle in what order of precedence the guests were to be ranged at table.

ll. 31, 2. **pick...guests**, choose out his guests from those among whom they were seated.

l. 36-P. 60, l. 1. **Though...morning**, *sc.* and must therefore be very hungry.

l. 2. **served**, helped to food.

l. 6. **sure**, evidently.

l. 10. **mode**, fashion.

l. 23. **polished in France**, a tour on the continent and more especially in France was in those days looked upon as indispensable for perfecting the manners of all young men of position: **uncivilized**, boorish, impolite.

l. 26. **This infamous...good-breeding**, this behaviour now accounted a mark of good breeding, but in reality disgraceful.

ll. 30, l. 1. **if the country...lurch**, if the country gentlemen adopt it, they will soon find that it is given up by the town and they will be left all alone in possession of this unenviable distinction. The phrase to 'leave in the lurch' was derived from its use in an old game called 'lurch.' "The game," says Skeat, "is mentioned in Cotgrave.—F. *lourche*, 'the game called Lurche, or, a Lurch in game; it *demoura lourche*, he was left in the lurch'... He also gives '*Ourche*, the game at tables called lurch.' This suggests that *lourche* stands for *l'ourche* the initial *l* being merely the definite article. A *lurch* is a term especially used when one person gains every point before another makes one; hence a plausible derivation may be obtained by supposing that *ourche* meant the pool in which the stakes were put. The lover's stakes remained in the *lurch*, or he was left in the *lurch*, when he did not gain a single piece from the pool, which all went to others. If this be so, the sense of *ourche* is easily obtained; it meant the 'pool,' i.e. the vase or jar into which the stakes were cast... The etymology is then obvious, viz., from Lat. *urceus*, a pitcher, vase. But this is guess."

l. 32. **come too late**, it having been abandoned by those whom they fancy they are imitating.

P. 61, l. 1. **turns upon**, has to do with, is concerned with.

l. 6. **height of their head-dresses**, see Essay No. 98.

l. 7. **upon...circuit**, going the circuit with the judges. The country for the administration of justice is divided into certain circuits to be made periodically by the judges when holding assizes.

## INSTINCT IN ANIMALS. No. 120.

P. 61, l. 29. **recollecting**, recalling; not the mere passive process of remembering, but the active one of calling up to his mind the remarks he has read, in order to apply them to the circumstances around him.

P. 62, l. 3. **demonstrative**, capable of being demonstrated as conclusive.

ll. 5, 7. **yet there...render**, yet there is in every turn in the muscles or twist in the fibres of each however slight that turn or twist may be, something which renders; "there is *not* [something] which does *not*," making the statement more emphatic.

l. 7. **proper**, suitable, peculiarly its own.

I. 12. *for the leaving a posterity*, we should now say either "for *the leaving of a*," etc., or "for *leaving a*," etc. For *of* following a verbal noun, see Abb. § 178.

I. 15. *of a nicer frame*, constituted with a more delicate perception.

I. 18. *their birth*, the creature born; the abstract for the concrete.

I. 23. *though you hatch*, even if you should hatch; subjunctive.

I. 25. *to the laying of a stick*, in every particular of the formation of the nest; to indicating limit.

I. 28. *different*, varied in construction.

II. 28-30. *according ... themselves*, according as they desired to adapt their habitations to this or that requirement of situation, of climate, of avoidance of danger, etc.

I. 31. *temper of weather*, temperature, degree of heat.

P. 63, l. 20. *which is not*, for this is not.

II. 23-5. *we find protection...received*, we see that parents who bestow protection and kindness upon their offspring, are more strongly impelled to love and tenderness towards them, from the fact of their having bestowed this protection and kindness, than the offspring are impelled to love and tenderness towards their parents from the fact of having received that protection and kindness; *i.e.* it might be expected that the receivers would feel this love and tenderness more strongly than the bestowers; and yet we find the exact reverse is the case, that those who have bestowed, *and because they have bestowed*, are more full of love, etc.

I. 26. *would wonder*, might naturally wonder *sceptical*, *s.* as to this difference between men and animals.

II. 26, 7. *disputing...animals*, arguing that animals do possess reason.

I. 31. *makes no discovery of*, never exhibits, displays.

II. 33, 4. *Animals...men*, an adaption of *Luke*, xvi. 8, "for the children of this world are in their generation wiser than the children of light; *sons of men*, mankind; also a Biblical phrase.

II. 35, 6. *Take...instinct*, place a dumb animal in a position in which his instinct does not come into play, where there is no scope for his instinct.

P. 64, l. 6. *cover them*, *i.e.* with her body when sitting upon them in the nest.

II. 7, 8. *the vital warmth*, from her body.

I. 17. *nicety*, careful skill.

II. 20-2. *nor to mention...appearance*, thus showing her instinctive knowledge that the eggs have become addled and will produce nothing.

II. 32, 3. *of any increase...lays*, *i.e.* if the keeper of the hen-house takes away any of the eggs in the nest or adds others to them.

ll. 35, 6. **of never...bird**, of a bird however different in species. Here **never** is used where we should now say *ever*; there is in fact an ellipsis and the full sentence would be "of so different a bird as never was." See Abb. § 52.

P. 65, l. 1. **which do not carry...regard**, which do not involve necessitate, her paying particular attention: **very**, utter, complete.

l. 7. **any properties in matter**, anything in the material formation, constitution, of the animal.

l. 15. **the first Mover**, God. Of gravitation, the *law* of which was laid down by Newton in his *Principia*, 1687, the author of that work writes, "I do not any where take on me to define the kind or manner of any action, the causes or physical reasons thereof, or attribute forces in a true and physical sense to certain centres, when I speak of them as attracting or endued with attractive powers."

#### INSTINCT IN ANIMALS—Continued. No. 121.

P. 65, l. 23. **stepmother**, properly speaking, the element **step-**, from A.S. *steop-*, *orphaned*, or *deprived of its parent*, is compounded only with such words as *child*, *son*, *daughter*; but the use was afterwards extended to form the compounds *stepfather*, *stepmother*, to denote the father or mother of the child who had lost one of its parents. Here of course it is applied to the hen who, for whatever reason, had been made to hatch the brood of young ducks.

P. 66, l. 3. **determines...centres**, causes all the portions of matter to seek their proper positions; the centripetal force which attracts matter; see quotation from Newton just above; **determines**, causes to find its limit, final resting-place.

l. 4. Peter Bayle, in his notes to *Bereira* and *Rorarius* in his *Historical Dictionary*, has a very long disquisition called "Concerning the opinions about the souls of beasts." Towards the end of the note on *Rorarius*, he quotes from the *Nouvelles de la Republique des Letters*, October, 1700, pp. 419-420: "Add to this the following words of Mons. Bernard,... 'I think I have read somewhere this position, *Deus est Anima Brutorum*. This expression is somewhat harsh, but it is susceptible of a reasonable sense.'" At the end of the note Bayle says: "I do not question that Dr. Bayle, a physician and professor of the Liberal Arts at Toulouse, has expressed Descartes' opinions on this head in his *Physiks*, which he has lately published in three volumes in 4to."

l. 11. **Dampier**, William, 1652-1715, navigator and hydrographer; in 1691 published *A Voyage Round the World*.

l. 16. **fall on**, eagerly attack, eat.

P. 67, ll. 14, 5. **though they are bred within doors**, not that all lambs are so bred, but in those cases in which they are so bred.

l. 19. **Locke**, John, 1632-1704, English philosopher; author, among other works, of *Essay concerning Human Understanding*, *Treatise on Education*, etc.

l. 31. **afflux**, access, flowing towards it; a word of rare use nowadays.

l. 35. **More**, Henry, 1614-1687, one of the original members of the Royal Society, author of *Divine Dialogues* and *Psychozoia*: **Cardan**, Girolamo Cardano, 1501-1575, born at Pavia, in Italy, natural philosopher and mathematician; also renowned as a physician.

P. 68, l. 1. **defective**, i.e., in comparison with other animals, though not as regards the kind of life it leads.

l. 3. **obvious**, commonplace; literally, meeting one in one's way.

ll. 10-2. **what she is capable of...her**, she is richly endowed with capacities for defence and faculties which give her warning of impending danger.

l. 14. **event**, result; the difference between an *event*, an *accident*, and a *contingency*, is that an *event* is an occurrence whether fortunate or unfortunate; an *accident*, an occurrence that takes us by surprise, and so more frequently and unfortunate occurrence: a *contingency*, an occurrence which accords with one's expectations, and so one more generally of a fortunate nature.

ll. 18, 9. **than will serve...body**, than will be sufficient for covering her body.

l. 21. **courses it not**, does not drag it along as she moves.

l. 23. **fain**, glad; but with the notion of being glad to take a certain course in default of opportunity for anything better.

ll. 25, 6. **had been**, would have been.

l. 27. **fetch her out**, pull her out.

l. 30. **Boyle**, Robert, 1626-1691, a distinguished man of science, and an early member of the Royal Society.

ll. 34, 5. **but one humour**, only one layer of watery matter. In the human eye and that of animals in general there are two humours, the aqueous humour, found in the anterior chamber of the eye, and the vitreous humour, filling the posterior chamber of the eye. Through both of these, as well as through the cornea and the crystalline lens, rays of light pass before reaching the retina and producing a luminous sensation.

ll. 35, 6. **the idea of light**, the image of light impressed on the eye.

P. 69, l. 9. **blemishes**, comparatively with the structure of other animals.

l. 18. **original**, origin.

l. 30. **howling wilderness**, desert abounding in all sorts of wild noises, the roar of the wind, the cries of wild beasts; a quotation from *Deuteronomy*, xxxii. 10: **the great deep**, the main ocean; from *Psalms*, li. 10.

1. 33. **the finest glasses**, glasses of the highest magnifying power.

P. 70, l. 5. **Tully**, see note on p. 66, l. 9.

ll. 6, 7. **and that in a style**, and this sketch written in a style: **raised**, elevated.

l. 9. **nice**, particular, minute.

ll. 9, 10. **when they pass ..writer**, when conveyed to us by the writings of a commonplace author.

### SIR ROGER AT THE ASSIZES. No. 122.

P. 70, ll. 17, 8. **those approbations**, that self-approval; we scarcely use the word in the plural now.

l. 26. **the returns of affection**, evidences of affection paid in return.

l. 30. **He would needs**, he was determined, had made up his mind. The phrase implies the idea that the act was one which he made necessary to himself though there was really no obligation upon him; **needs**, the old genitive used adverbially.

P. 71, l. 1. **plain men**, unpretending countrymen, as opposed to the fine gentlemen of the town: **rid**, a form of the past tense no longer in use.

l. 7. **he is just...game act**, this refers to the old game laws by which persons were not allowed to obtain a license unless duly qualified by birth or estate. The ordinary qualification was ownership of lands of the minimum yearly value of £100, and Sir Roger has just spoken of the person in question as being "a yeoman of about a hundred pounds a year."

l. 13. **shoots flying**, kills his birds while on the wing, not while sitting on the ground or on a tree, which would be a most unsportsman-like act.

l. 14. **petty-jury**, the jury which sits in court to give a verdict on the cases tried, as opposed to the grand jury which decides before trial whether a true bill has been found against the accused and whether they shall be sent for trial or not.

l. 16. **taking the law...body**, going to law with everybody on the slightest provocation. The name "Touchy" indicates his touchiness, his readiness to take offence at anything: **one**, a single person.

l. 18. **quarter-sessions**, see note, p. 6, l. 29

l. 19. **the Widow**, see p. 6, l. 7.

ll. 24, 5. **cast...cast**, has won and lost so many lawsuits.

ll. 26, 7. **the old...tree**, going to the assizes to fight out his old suit, in which a willow tree is the bone of contention.

P. 72, l. 2. **upon...trot**, as he was riding at full trot; **round**, often used, as here, merely with an intensive force; so we say, 'a round rebuke,' 'a good round sum,' etc., the idea of thoroughness being due to the completeness of a circle.

l. 9. **The court was sat**, the court had assembled, the various officers having taken their seats. The difference between 'was' and 'had' in such sentences is that the former indicates a state, the latter the activity necessary to cause that state.

ll. 12-4. **who, for his reputation...circuit**, in order to maintain his reputation as a man of importance and credit with the Judge, made a point of whispering in his ear as if he had something of importance to communicate, though in reality his remark was merely about the weather.

ll. 25, 6. **was up**, was on his legs and about to speak.

l. 26. **was so little...purpose**, had so little in it that was pertinent to the matter in hand.

l. 29. **to give...eye**, to make him appear to me as a man of importance.

l. 35. **his courage, that**, the courage of him who, etc.

P. 73, l. 9. **sign post**, here the sign was Sir Roger's head.

l. 14. **made him**, we should now say 'paid him.'

ll. 19, 20. **be at the charge of it**, bear the expense of its being altered.

l. 22. **aggravation, i.e.** making the features larger and fiercer.

l. 23. **the Saracen's Head**, this sign, a very common one, was a relic from the Crusades, and may still be seen, as in the Lamb and Saracen's Head in Westminster.

l. 30. **discovering**, showing.

l. 31. **upon...face**, when this monstrous face was displayed before us.

P. 74, l. 1. **conjuring**, earnestly desiring; literally, solemnly imploring, from *Lat. conjurare*, to swear together, to combine by oath.

l. 3. **composed my countenance**, put on a serious look.

l. 4. **that much...sides**, wittily reproducing Sir Roger's own words when deciding between Will Wimble and Tom Touchy.

## EDUCATION OF COUNTRY SQUIRES. No. 123.

P. 75, ll. 6, 7. **reflecting...born to**, dwelling upon the importance in life of the position which they have inherited by birth.

ll. 7, 8. **thinking...unnecessary**, thinking that no cultivation of their powers and faculties is necessary to those born to such a position: of course, strictly speaking, being so born is not an "accomplishment," and therefore the expression "all other accomplishments" is not really logical.



1. 13. **in a line**, from father to son.

1. 19. **novel**, a short story, generally of love. The word in its modern sense is of late origin; its earlier use was in the plural, =Fr. *nouvelles* news.

1. 25. **threw...court**, used all his energies to get admitted to a court; the word **threw** indicates the ardour and energy with which he pushed his way in.

11. 32, 3. **the interest of its princes**, the personal objects which each of the sovereigns had in view.

P. 76, l. 1. **digested his knowledge**, did not merely swallow it down in a crude mass so that it was of no practical use to him, but assimilated it with his mental system in the shape of expression, as well-digested food is assimilated with the bodily system in the shape of blood, bone, flesh etc.

1. 7. **turned of forty**, more than forty years old; the idea in **turned** is that of passing round, and so beyond, a fixed point.

1. 8. **there is . . . life**, one can no longer afford to play with life. "Addison is quoting from Cowley's 'Several Discourses by way of Essays in Prose and Verse,' No. 10, 'On the Danger of Procrastination'—'There's no fooling with life when it is once turned beyond forty'" (Salmon).

1. 9. **pursuant to**, following out, in accordance with.

1. 11. **in order to this**, with this purpose.

11. 31, 2. **at years of discretion**, at an age when they might be supposed capable of managing their own affairs.

P. 77, l. 3. **had wrought themselves**, by constant companionship with their adopted children had brought themselves to feel.

1. 10. **was dictated...affection**, was impelled, constrained, by his love as a father.

1. 13. **circumstances**, position in life, as regarded money; here the £300 a year which was Leontine's income.

1. 14. **he was to make**, it would be necessary for him to make.

1. 23. **exercises**, including physical as well as mental training.

1. 24. **the inns of court**, of which the principal are Lincoln's Inn, the Inner and Middle Temple, and Gray's Inn.

11. 25-7. **where there are...them**, those who know that they are heirs to large properties, not thinking it worth while to work hard.

1. 33. **foster-father**, one who had brought him up.

P. 78, l. 2. **a very uneasy passion**, a passion which caused him great disgust from his not being (as he supposed) her equal in wealth.

1. 4. **indirect**, underhand, not straightforward.

1. 11. **give him...country**, enable him to make himself a man of mark and importance.

11. 20, 1. **the good man**, *sc.* Leontine.

l. 23. **salutes**, handshakings and exchange of inquiries as to the health and wellbeing of each other.

l. 24. **closet**, private room.

l. 29. **your father**, i.e. by your marriage with his daughter; father-in-law.

l. 31. **misplaced**, as being given to one who was not really her father.

l. 34. **the relish**, the keen pleasure of enjoying.

P. 79, l. 3. **discoveries**, revelations.

l. 8. **in dumb show**, by his gestures.

l. 9. **that were...utterance**, which so overpowered him that he could not give expression to them in words.

l. 14. **effects**, results.

#### MISCHIEFS OF PARTY SPIRIT. No. 125.

P. 79, l. 24. **Roundheads**, a term applied in the Civil War between Charles I. and the Parliament to the Parliamentarians; said to have arisen from those persons having a round bowl or dish put upon their heads and their hair cut to the edge of the bowl in order to contrast themselves with the **Cavaliers**, or supporters of Charles, who wore their hair in the long curls fashionable at Court; the appellation "Cavaliers" was given originally to a number of gentlemen who, in 1641, formed themselves into a body-guard for the king.

ll. 25, 6. **a stripling**, a youth, a lad; a double diminutive of *strip* = 'one as thin as a strip,' a growing lad not yet filled out.

l. 27. **St. Anne's Lane**, either the lane of that name on the right of Aldersgate Street, behind the Post Office, or that leading out of St. Peter's Street, Westminster.

P. 80, l. 2. **a prick-eared cur**, a term of contempt applied to mongrels. Harrison, *England*, bk. iii., c. 7, speaking of English dogs, says, "The last sort consisteth of the currish...kind, of which the whippet, or *prick-eared cur* is one"; and Knight, on *H. v.* ii. l. 44, "thou *Prick-ear'd cur* of Iceland," remarks "that the *prick-ears* are invariable indications of the half-reclaimed animal. The Esquimaux dog, the dog of the Mackenzie River, and the Australasian dog, or dingo—furnish striking examples of this characteristic." This term of contempt was one of frequent use in old days; but here the special application is to the Puritans whose ears, from their wearing their hair cut so short, stood out prominently to view, and so a "prick-eared cur" is the exact opposite of a "popish cur"—the former of the two persons questioned by young Sir Roger being a Puritan, the latter, one of the High-Church party, or adherents of Charles: **for his pains**, for taking the trouble to ask him the way to St. Anne's Lane.

II. 13, 4. **besides that...game**, Sir Roger as a landowner and a sportsman naturally refers to matters in which he was specially interested as being affected by revolutionary times, just as a citizen would attribute to such disturbances a rise in the price of bread or of stuff goods. But he is referring in particular to the enhancement of the Land Tax by a more accurate valuation of estates. This tax, imposed in 1699, to meet the cost of the French War, grew out of a subsidy scheme of four shillings in the pound, which in 1692 produced £500,000. In subsequent years the rate varied from one to four shillings in the pound. In 1798 Pitt fixed it perpetually at four shillings, but introduced a plan for its redemption. The enhancement of the tax Sir Roger attributes to the bitter feeling of the Whigs (in power in 1699) towards the Tory land-owners; and the destruction of game to the greater security of poachers in times when the country gentlemen were divided among themselves: **spoil good neighbourhood**, put an end to that good feeling which should prevail among neighbours.

I. 15. **a greater judgment**, a heavier penalty adjudged by Providence. The word **judgment** is used in a Biblical sense of evils sent down upon a people by God in punishment of their sins.

I. 21. **common enemy**, enemy to both parties.

I. 25. **sinks**, greatly lowers.

I. 29. **breaks out**, exhibits itself.

I. 34. **Plutarch**, the celebrated Greek biographer, whose most famous work is his *Parallel Lives*. He flourished in the first century of the Christian era, but the exact dates of his birth and death are uncertain.

P. 81, II. 5-7. **which derives...object**, according to which the malignity of hatred, the fierce desire to cause injury, is due not to anything in the object of that hatred, but to the evil nature of the passion itself.

I. 7. **that great rule**, laid down by Christ, *Luke*, vi. 27-37.

I. 16. **the regard of**, or, as we should say, "a regard for."

I. 20. **cried up**, highly praised.

I. 22. **of a different principle**, when viewed through principles which he holds in opposition to our own principles.

II. 25-7. **is like...itself**, is like, for example, to a stick which, when viewed through the air alone seems straight and entire, but when viewed through the air and water seems crooked or broken.

I. 28. **figure**, mark, note.

I. 29. **who does...characters**, who is not viewed in two different lights according as his principles agree or do not agree with those of the person estimating him.

I. 34. **parts**, intellectual qualities.

P. 82, II. 2, 3. **a dull scheme...writing**, a stupid exposition, an outline clumsily executed, of the principles held by a party, is spoken of with admiration by those who belong to that party.

l. 7. **raising...it**, basing upon it inferences as to his character and probable actions.

l. 9. **postulatums**, propositions assumed without proof, as being self-evident; the Latin plural is *postulata*, and here the sign of the plural in English is added to a word that has never become naturalized in the language.

ll. 10, 1. **as upon...men**, as they would do upon first principles universally admitted; "first principles" are those behind, or beyond, which we cannot go.

l. 20. **Guelphes and Gibellines**, or *Guelphs* and *Ghibelines*, "names given to the papal and imperial factions who destroyed the peace of Italy from the 12th to the end of the 15th century (the invasion of Charles VIII. of France in 1495). The origin of the name is ascribed to the contest for the imperial crown between Conrad of Hohenstaufen, duke of Swabia, lord of Wiblingen (hence *Ghibelin*), and Henry, nephew of Welf or Guelph, duke of Bavaria, in 1138. The former was successful; but the popes and several Italian cities took the side of his rival. *His Guelph* and *His Gibelin* are said to have been used as warcries in 1140, at a battle before Weinsberg, in Würtemberg, when Guelph of Bavaria was defeated by the emperor Conrad IV, who came to help the rival duke Leopold. The Ghibelines were almost totally expelled from Italy in 1267, when Conradin, the last of the Hohenstaufens, was beheaded by Charles of Anjou" (Haydn, *Dictionary of Dates*).

l. 21. **the league**, the Catholic league, formed by Henry, duke of Guise, in 1576, against the Huguenots, or Protestant party, in France.

l. 22. **unhappy**, unfortunate.

ll. 25, 6. **a specious concern**, a plausible but not real anxiety.

P. 83, ll. 8, 9. **in great figures of life**, in prominent political positions: **because**, *merely* because.

l. 11. **grateful**, pleasing, acceptable.

l. 15. **innocence...virtue**, innocent and virtuous persons; the abstract for the concrete.

ll. 17, 8. **whigs or tories**, the former answering as a political party to the Liberals of to-day. The word *whig* is said by Burnet to be a contraction of "*whiggamor*," applied to certain Scotchmen who came from the west in the summer to buy corn at Leith...A march to Edinburgh made by the Marquis of Argyle and 6,000 men was called the '*whiggamor's* inroad,' and afterwards those who opposed the court came in contempt to be called *whigs*"... (Skeat, *Ety. Dist.*). The derivation of the word is uncertain: the latter answering to the Conservatives of to-day, and like *whig*, first used in an obnoxious sense. "*Tories*," says Trench, *Select Glossary*, quoted by Skeat, "was a name properly belonging to the Irish bog-trotters, who, during our Civil War, robbed and plundered, professing to be in arms for the royal cause; and from them, about 1680, to those who sought to maintain the extreme prerogatives of the Crown."

MISCHIEFS OF PARTY SPIRIT—*Continued.* N. 126.

P. 83, l. 25. **As it is designed**, as, according to the plan there sketched out, the intention is that, etc.

P. 84, l. 1. **are hereunto subscribed**, in imitation of legal phraseology.

ll. 5, 6. **with the hazard**, at the risk.

l. 11. **such...that**, such as; see Abb. §§ 278, 279.

l. 18. **are for promoting**, desire, seek, to promote.

l. 19. **colour**, pretence.

l. 20. **retainers**, adherents.

l. 29. **and all this**, and would *do* all this.

l. 32. **Diodorus Siculus**, a Greek historian, born at Agyrium in Sicily, a contemporary of Julius Caesar and Augustus, author of *The Historical Library*, a universal history, embracing a period from the earliest mythical ages down to the beginning of Caesar's Gallic wars.

l. 34. **the ichneumon**, an Egyptian carnivorous animal, literally, 'the tracker,' from Gk. *ἰχνεύειν*, to track, from its tracking out the eggs of the crocodile, which it devours; though Addison denies this.

P. 85, ll. 2, 3. **finds...them**, turns them to any advantage; **account**, in this phrase means a reckoning in one's favour; a similar phrase is to "turn a thing to one's account."

l. 11. **Tartars**, more properly *Tatars*, Persian *Tátdr*, a Tartar or Scythian; the ordinary spelling being adopted from a false etymology, because their multitudes were supposed to have proceeded from *Tartarus*, or hell.

l. 14. **of course**, as a matter of course; as a necessary consequence.

l. 21. **contracts**, becomes infected with; as we speak of "contracting" a disease.

l. 22. **of a politer conversation**, accustomed to more refined intercourse, society; the older and more literal sense of "conversation."

ll. 23, 4. **even to...bow**, even to ordinary social courtesies, such as returning the salute of those one meets in the streets, or in another person's house; the bow, or bending of the body as a mark of recognition, was of old used of men only, as the *curtsey* (*i.e.*, courtesy) was of women.

l. 27. **tools**, inferior agents, instruments.

l. 28. **cock-match**, match between fighting-cocks pitted against one another for a stake of money; a barbarous pastime which, like quail-fighting, was much indulged in by our forefathers.

ll. 29, 30. **fills the country...fox-hunters**, *i.e.* this party-spirit is carried so far that the gatherings of racing men and hunting men, which periodically assemble in country localities, are made up of either Whigs only or of Tories only, the two factions never combining even in meetings which have to do with matters of physical diversion.

1. 32. **quarter-sessions**, see note on p. 6, l. 29.

l. 36-P. 86, l. 1. **the landed...interest**, the one being a land-owner and the other a merchant, their thoughts and prepossessions are severally inclined, turned, towards the classes to which they belong. We speak of the "landed interest," "the moneyed interest," etc., meaning the class whose interest is in land, money, etc.

l. 2. **that it proceeds...raillery**, that it never goes beyond a pleasant interchange of banter; never exceeds those limits and passes into bitterness or abuse, as is often the case with eager partizans.

l. 6. **for the keeping...interest**, in order to preserve that hold which he has upon the feelings and political support of those about him, who are more narrow-minded than himself, and whose good opinion he would quickly lose if he showed the slightest inclination to more liberal opinions.

l. 8. **bait**, refresh ourselves and our horses; to bait is the causal of to bite.

ll. 11, 2. **was against...election**, did what he could at the last election to prevent Sir Roger's return as member of parliament for the county.

ll. 12, 3. **betrayed us...cheer**, obliged us to put up with hard beds and poor food, from our want of caution in inquiring as to the character of the inn in regard to these particulars.

ll. 19, 20. **take up with**, put up with, make no objections to.

l. 23. **an honest man**, in other words a supporter of the same party as himself.

l. 26. **the bowling-green**, the grass-plot, lawn, on which bowls are played; the game of bowls was of old a much more favourite pastime than at present.

l. 28. **side**, political party.

l. 29. **of a better presence**, of a more gentlemanly exterior, appearance.

l. 31. **a very fair bettor**, one who paid his bets without demur when he lost.

ll. 31, 2. **would take him up**, would make a bet with him when he offered to lay upon one player, or side, or another.

l. 33. **a disagreeable vote**, a vote that did not please them.

l. 35. **correspondence**, intercourse, communication.

P. 87, l. 4. **nobody knows where**, i. e. from all manner of untrustworthy sources.

l. 5. **staring**, sc. with incredulity.

ll. 7, 8. **stopped short...discourse**, suddenly broke the thread of his discourse, came to an abrupt close in his narrative.

l. 10. **fanatic**, madman; particularly in matters of religion; a term applied in the latter half of the seventeenth century to Nonconformists

as a hostile epithet; Lat. *fanaticus*, from *fanum*, a temple. Here Will's suspicions are as to the Spectator's sanity in political matters.

I. 11. a serious concern, a feeling of great alarm.

II. 18, 9. as in their first principles, as in embryo: as already germinating.

### SIR ROGER AND THE GIPSIES. No. 130.

P. 87, l. 27. **gipsies**, or more properly 'gypsies,' a nomad race whose original home was in India, though the earlier supposition was that they were Egyptians, whence the word, which is merely a corruption of the M.E. *Egyptien*, an Egyptian.

I. 28, P. 88, l. 1. **exert...peace**, exercise the powers which as justice of the peace he possessed of arresting them.

I. 2. **his clerk**, without whose advice he did not like to act. The clerk of a justice of the peace being trained to the law was, like the clerk to the magistrates in the present day, the person on whose advice his superior acted in all cases in which a legal difficulty presented itself.

II. 3, 4. **fearing...it**, *sc.* by the depredations of their fellow gypsies in case any legal steps should be taken against them.

I. 8. **to have it**, to find it out and carry it off.

I. 9. **ten to one**, *i.e.* long odds.

I. 14. **so agog**, in a state of such eagerness. "*Gog* signifies eagerness, desire; and is so used by Beaumont and Fletcher; 'you have put me into such a *gog* of going, I would not stay for all the world' (*Wit Without Money*, iii. 1). To 'set *agog*' is to put in eagerness, to make one eager or anxious to do a thing"... (Skeat, *Ety. Dict.*).

I. 16. **crosses their hands**, with a piece of silver which thereby becomes their property.

II. 23, 4. **Sweethearts...upon**, *i.e.* by promising lovers to the men and maidens they lure money out of them.

I. 30. **communicated...them**, held out our hands for them to examine: A **Cassandra**, a prophetess; Cassandra was a daughter of Priam and Hecuba on whom Apollo conferred the gift of prophecy.

I. 31. **crew**, company, gang; generally, except of the crew of a vessel, used, as here, in a contemptuous sense: **my lines**, the lines running across the palm of the hand.

I. 32. **in a corner**, where I could have her to myself.

I. 35. **exposing his palm**, holding out his hand with the palm of it turned upwards; Gk. *παλάμη*. "The sense of 'flat-hand' is the more original, the tree being named from its flat spreading leaves which bear some resemblance to the hand spread out. Yet it is remarkable that the word was first known in England in the sense of palm-tree" (Skeat, *Ety. Dict.*).



P. 89, l. 4. **line of life**, this line, which is supposed to indicate the length and character of the life of a person, runs in a curve from the ball of the forefinger across the whole palm or 'table' of the hand.

l. 5. **an idle baggage**, a silly 'piece of goods,' as we also say, a hussy; but used good-humouredly.

l. 14. **roguish leer**, wicked smile.

l. 16. **for nothing**, without its indicating a fascinating character: **uncouth**, odd, strange. The literal sense is 'unknown,' from A.S. *un-*, not, and *cūð*, known, past participle of *cunnan*, to know: **gibberish**, nonsensical talk; formed from 'gibber,' to gabble.

l. 17. **like...oracle**, like the ambiguous terms in which an oracle was delivered.

l. 24. **jocund**, merry, in high spirits.

l. 28. **palmistry**, the so-called science of reading the destiny of a man from the lines the palm of his hand, but here meaning sleight of hand: **vermin**, properly such insects as lice, fleas, etc., engendered by dirt, and thence used of any obnoxious creature.

l. 36. **trekschuyt**, from Du. *trekken*, to draw, and *schuyt*, boat; the Dutch *schuyts* still bring eels from Holland up the Thames to London.

P. 90, ll. 1, 2. **putting off**, starting from the wharf.

l. 9. **speak readily in**, we now omit the preposition.

ll. 16, 7. **gave him for drowned**, assumed that he had been drowned; we should now say, 'gave him *up* for drowned.'

l. 20. **laying together**, comparing.

l. 31. **our linguist**, the boy who was so skilled in various languages.

P. 91, l. 2. **with great reputation**, expressing the result of his being so employed.

## COUNTRY'S OPINION OF THE SPECTATOR. No. 131.

P. 91, ll. 8, 9. **to preserve the game**, here to spare the game, not to shoot it until he can find no other game to shoot. But a man is said to 'preserve game' when he protects it from being destroyed, either by its eggs being taken or its being killed when young by weasels, etc., and allows no one but himself and his friends to shoot it when of full age.

l. 12. **beats about**, *sc.* with the help of dogs to put up the game.

ll. 14, 5. **sure of finding...worst**, sure of plenty of sport when the fields he has already beaten are drawn blank, when there is no hope of any game being put up in that direction.

ll. 17, 8. **is the harder...at**, can only be found in small quantities and with much difficulty.

l. 20. **preys**, seeks his prey.

l. 24. **sportsmen...species**, *i.e.* essayists who have to discover subjects for their writing.

l. 25. **started...hunted**, carrying on the same metaphors, as again in "spring," "put up," "foil," "puzzle," "scent," etc.

ll. 25, 6. **hunted them down**, run them down, brought them to a successful termination, issue.

l. 28. **spring anything**, start any subject for my pursuit.

l. 29. **following one character**, pursuing the study of one character.

ll. 29, 30. **it is ten...crossed**, it is long odds in favour of my attention being diverted; in **crossed** the metaphor is specially from fox-hunting where a second fox often crosses the line taken by the fox and so distracts the hounds by a fresh scent.

l. 31-P. 92, l. 1. **foil the scent**, make it difficult to follow the scent by confusing one with the other.

ll. 1-3. **My greatest...it**, my greatest difficulty in the one case is to find any subject at all on which to write, in the other to select one from the many that present themselves.

ll. 3-5. **as I have given...Westminster**, as during the month I have spent here I have written nothing on subjects connected with London and Westminster; he speaks as though London and Westminster were coverts that he had not drawn for game during the past month.

l. 14. **Will Wimble**, see Essay No. 108.

l. 17. **killed a man**, *sc.* in a duel.

l. 19. **will needs have it**, persist in declaring.

l. 20. **a cunning man**, an expert in the treatment of witches.

l. 22. **charms**, incantations, spells; literally, things sung: **which I go under**, which I bear.

ll. 23, 4. **a White Witch**, witches were divided of old into black and white, evil and good; those that worked mischief to the bodies of men and beasts, and those who used their powers to reveal, prevent, or remove, such mischief.

l. 26. **not of Sir Roger's party**, a political opponent of Sir Roger.

l. 27. **wishes**, hopes; this is the outward expression of his feelings, while inwardly he feels pretty sure that Sir Roger's guest is a Jesuit, and rejoices at the idea of convicting his opponent of giving shelter to such an odious creature. The members of the Society of Jesus, founded by Ignatius Loyola in 1534, were of all priests of the Church of Rome the most obnoxious to English Protestants. They were ordered by parliament to be expelled from England in 1579, 1581, 1586, and 1602, and any one harbouring them was liable to heavy penalties.

ll. 28, 9. **the gentlemen of the country**, the country gentlemen of the neighbourhood.

l. 30 **give...myself**, say who and what I am, prove that I am a respectable person.

ll. 33, 4. **converses very promiscuously**, associates with all kinds and classes of persons; **converses**, in the older and more literal sense of the word.

l. 35. **some discarded Whig**, some Whig whom his own party has thrown aside, will no longer employ. "Addison," says Salmon, "was literally a discarded Whig. His party had been driven from office the year before, and he had himself lost a place worth 2,000 l. a year." To *discard* is a term in games at cards for throwing away a card that is of little or no use to the hand.

l. 36. **out of place**, probably with a double sense, (1) not amid society to his liking, (2) out of official employment.

P. 93, ll. 2, 3. **a disaffected person**, one not well affected towards the sovereign.

ll. 6, 7. **because...noise**, because I do not follow the manners and customs of the ordinary country gentleman.

ll. 10, 1. **that I do not...nothing**, that my silence is due to some very suspicious cause.

l. 14. **temper**, disposition, habit of mind.

l. 15. **good neighbourhood**, sociability of a somewhat boisterous character.

l. 17. **breaks...him**, suddenly forces his company upon him.

l. 18. **every chance-comer**, every one that may chance to pay him a visit, however slight an acquaintance he may be.

ll. 18, 9. **will be...time**, is determined to occupy his time as he chooses.

l. 20. **makes...life**, is thought a very unsociable fellow by men who have little to occupy their time, very few resources in their own minds.

ll. 21, 2. **if I may...phrase**, the ordinary phrase being to retire into the country, where solitude is so much easier.

l. 23. **in order to be alone**, an allusion to the saying, "Never less alone than when alone": **raise**, sc. in his own mind, as though they were spectres.

ll. 30, 1. **rallies...way**, banters me in his somewhat clumsy fashion.

l. 33. **picking of**, for *of*, following the verbal noun, see Abb. §178.

l. 34. **smelling to**, now an obsolete construction, and probably intended by Addison to indicate the writer's old-fashioned style: Taylor, the Water Poet, uses the expression "lock of hay," and oddly enough the construction, "smell unto," in the same passage, "For never would he touch a *locke of hay*, or *smell unto* a heape or provender": **a lock**, a wisp, bundle.

P. 94, l. 1. **cursedly**, terribly; as he says below and we still say colloquially, 'confoundedly.'

l. 4. **stories of a cock and bull**, idle and incredible stories; the origin of this phrase, which is of early use, lies probably in some fable.

Murray, *Eng. Lit.*, points out that the French have a parallel phrase, *coq-à-lâne*.

ll. 5, 6. **Thy speculations...meadows**, i.e. are not such as town-bred men find any delight in; are altogether too rustical for us.

l. 8. **Service**, compliments.

l. 9. **is grown the cock of the club**, plumes himself upon being the most important person among us; rules the roost. For Sir Andrew, see Essay No. 2.

l. 11. **every mother's son of us**, a common colloquial expression which is supposed to emphasize the totality, as though it were something more than 'every one of us': **commonwealth's-men**. thorough republicans.

#### A SCENE IN A STAGE COACH. No. 132.

P. 94, l. 28. **the chamberlain**, the groom of the chambers, the servant whose duty it was to look after the rooms occupied by the various people staying at the inn, and who would consequently know which of them were going by the next day's coach.

l. 30. **Mrs.**, here used of an unmarried lady, in whose case we now write *Miss*; both terms are abbreviations of the same word, *Mistress*: **the great fortune**, the well-known heiress.

l. 31-P. 95, l. 1. **who took...go**, *sc.* with the object of making their acquaintance during the journey, and, if possible, of getting into the good graces of the heiress.

ll. 3, 4. **a gentleman...dumb**, *sc.* the Spectator himself, whose reticence has so often been confessed, and who would naturally have got the reputation among the country folk of being dumb.

ll. 5, 6. **that according...intelligence**, that, as was natural in a man like himself, who was always coming in contact with a number of people of all sorts, he picked up a good deal of news on various topics and also conveyed a good deal to others; **dealt in**, trafficked in, giving and receiving.

l. 9. **called**, roused from sleep.

l. 14. **half pike**, the pike was a kind of lance, and the **half pike** a shortened form of the same weapon, was of old carried by infantry officers.

l. 16. **equipage**, retinue; more usually of material apparatus: **was very loud that**, etc., loudly, authoritatively, demanded that, etc.

l. 18. **cloke-bag**, portmanteau, as we should now say; in common use in Elizabethan English, and applied to Falstaff (*i. H. IV. ii. 4. 497*, "that stuffed *cloak-bag* of guts") in one of those 'unsavoury similes' with which he reproached the Prince: **the seat**, apparently here the "well" of the coach, as we should now call it, underneath the feet of the inside passengers.

1. 21. **to look sharp**, to take good care.

1. 22. **the place...coach-box**, the most comfortable place in a coach, the motion being less felt there than when sitting back to the horses and so nearer to them.

1. 24. **not too good-natured**, not over-burdened with good-nature, with no superabundance of kindly feeling in their nature.

1. 26. **jumbled...familiarity**, obliged us by being thrown into such close contact to behave with a certain amount of friendliness. To *jumble* is to mix together confusedly, to jolt or shake about together; in a similar figurative sense we speak of matters shaking down, *i.e.* gradually coming to a more peaceful, more harmonious, state.

1. 34. **plain**, outspoken.

P. 96, l. 1. **a soldier of fortune**, is in common use, a soldier who is ready to serve under any flag so long as he can benefit himself by so doing; but here there is a veiled allusion to the fortune of the heiress: **vain**, conceited, affected.

1. 3. **I had ... it**, there was nothing left for me to do, after this rude speech of the officer, but to *pretend* to fall fast asleep, *i.e.* all conversation was rendered so impossible by this rude speech, that I was quite at a loss what to do, and thought it best to affect to sleep and so appear unconscious of the unpleasant state of affairs and of any further remarks the officers might make.

1. 7. **bride man**, "best man," as we now say; the friend who stands in the same relation to the bridegroom as the bridesmaids to the bride, the assistance rendered in both cases being of a purely formal and ornamental character.

1. 9. **what is what**, *i.e.*, the fitness of things; what the occasion requires. "From two of the absurd questions asked in old systems of logic, '*Quid est?*' ('What is it?') and '*Quid est quid?*' ('What is what?') we have the noun *quiddity* (essence) and the phrase 'to know what's what' "... (Salmon).

1. 10. **shall give...father**, shall act the part of father in giving the bride away. At the marriage ceremony of the English Church, in answer to the question put by the priest, "Who giveth this woman in marriage?" the father, or in his absence some person chosen to act for him, answers "I do."

1. 11. **smartness**, ready wit.

ll. 11, 2. **I take...part**, I am obliged to you for the compliment you have paid me.

1. 12. **thou hast**, in the Quaker manner of speech the second person singular is always used in addressing a person, as being more literally in accordance with truth than the plural *you*.

1. 14. **if I have...her**, if it rests with me to give her in marriage.

ll. 16, 7. **thy drum...empty**, cp. *H. V.* iv. 4. 70-3, "I never did know so full a voice issue from so empty a heart; but the saying is true, 'The

empty vessel makes the greater sound"; *Lear*, i. l. 156, 7, "Nor are those empty-hearted whose low sound Reverbs no hollowness"; and Lyly's *Euphues*, "The emptie vessel giveth a greater sound than the full barrel."

l. 20. **the great city**, *sc.* London.

l. 21. **we cannot...way**, we cannot, in order to please you, who are only one of the partners to the hire of this coach, turn out of our way and go to the nearest town as you propose.

l. 25. **thy courageous countenance**, the boldness which is natural to you as a soldier.

l. 26. **children of peace**, with none of your martial courage.

l. 27. **give quarter to us**, be merciful to us.

l. 28. **flee**, jeer, speak tauntingly.

ll. 29, 30. **what he containeth**, what thoughts he had in his mind though he refrained from uttering them.

l. 34. **hasped up**, shut up, fastened so that we cannot get out; not literally, but in the sense that it was impossible to get rid of his company except by discontinuing their journey and being set down on the high road without any means of proceeding on their way; **hasped**, a verb formed from the substantive *hasp*, a clasp, a bolt, a bar.

ll. 34, 5. **is in some degree...road**, is little better than the behaviour of a highway robber; differs only in degree from an assault on the public road, a criminal offence.

l. 36. **happy**, felicitous, well-timed in its jocularity.

P. 97, ll. 1, 2. **which can...time**, which though found guilty is not abashed.

l. 2. **Faith**, here and throughout his speech the captain with merry impudence mimics the Quaker's phraseology.

ll. 4, 5. **a smoky old fellow**, an equivalent in the slang of the day to such later slang as "one up to snuff," "a downy old cove." "An old smoker," in former days, was one who was well experienced in any matters. The verb to *smoke*, as a slang term, was used in the sense of to detect, e.g. *A. W.* iv. l. 30, "they begin to smoke me," and also for to make fun of, or abuse. See p. 109, l. 15.

l. 9. **was so far...ruffle**, was so far from being seriously disturbed by this little breeze; the waters were ruffled, but only ruffled: the incident was but a storm in a saucer.

ll. 11, 2. **their different...company**, each his own function in providing for the comfort of the party.

ll. 12, 3. **Our reckonings...accomodation**, *sc.* when they stopped to bait at an inn.

l. 16. **taking place**, taking the best, the middle, of the roadway, and compelling those whom they met to wait till they had passed.

l. 18. **entertain**, afford amusement, be of interest.

1. 30. **a right inward man**, a really fine character.

1. 34. **knowing**, well versed, skilled.

P. 98, l. 4. **modes**, fashions of dress.

1. 7. **affections**, feelings, dispositions.

### SIR ROGER IN TOWN. No. 269.

P. 98, l. 23. **Gray's-inn walks**, or Gray's Inn Gardens, were planted by Lord Bacon, who was Treasurer of Gray's Inn, in 1597. They were a fashionable promenade of Charles the Second's time. Pepys, writing in May 1662, says, "When church was done, my wife and I walked to Gray's Inne, to observe the fashions of the ladies, because of my wife making some clothes." Lamb, *Essays of Elia*, *On some of the old Actors*, writes, "I am ill at dates, but I think it is now better than five-and-twenty years ago, that walking in the gardens of Gray's Inn—...they are still the best gardens of any of the Inns of Court, my beloved Temple not forgotten—have the gravest character; their aspect being altogether reverend and law-breathing—Bacon has left the impress of his foot upon their gravel walks," etc. Gray's Inn, Holborn, was in the time of Edward I. the manor of Reginald de Gray, but was leased to the lawyers about the middle of the 14th century, and in Ben Jonson's time stood at the head of the Inns of Court, though now only the fourth in importance. Here Bacon wrote his *Novum Organum*, and among the members of the Society were Sir William Gascoigne, who committed Henry V., then Prince of Wales, to prison for contempt of court; Cromwell, Earl of Essex; Bishop Gardiner; Lord Burleigh; Sir Nicholas Bacon, and his greater son; Archbishop Whitgift, Bishop Hall, and Archbishop Laud.

1. 26. **Prince Eugène**, François, Prince of Savoy, 1663–1736, son of Eugène Maurice, Count of Soissons, entered the Austrian service, distinguished himself against the Turks in 1683, and was present at the siege of Belgrade in 1688. Later on he took part in the War of the Succession in Spain, joined Marlborough in 1704, being present at the battle of Blenheim, and again in Flanders in 1708, at Malplaquet and Oudenarde. Subsequently he distinguished himself against the Turks at the battles of Peterwaradin and Belgrade. Being of an Italian family, he signed himself *Eugenio* (as Sir Roger styles him).

1. 28. **curiosity**, keen interest.

P. 99, l. 2. **Scanderbeg**, George Castriota, 1414–1467, an Albanian prince; he escaped from the Turks, among whom he had been brought up as a hostage, and having recovered his throne and renounced Muhammadanism, maintained a long and successful war against his enemies. Jonson, *Every man in his Humour*, i. 2, uses his name as an intensive. "Whoreson Scanderbag rogue!" The name was given him by the Turks in derision and is made up of Scandar, i.e. Iskandar, the



Turkish transliteration of Alexander (the Great), and *beg*, a chief, now used in the form *bey*.

l. 5. **to clear his pipes**, to clear his throat; the pipes being the bronchial tubes.

ll. 7, 8. **the strength...hems**, as showing him still to be a hale, hearty, old man; **hems**, ejaculations in clearing his throat. To *hem*, or to *cry hem*, is often used of an ejaculation of warning or encouragement.

l. 11. **an alms**, we usually say "alms" without the indefinite article, but **an** is quite correct, the word being really a singular noun, contracted from A.S. *almesse*, a corruption of ecclesiastical Lat. *eleemosyna*, from Gk. *ἐλεημοσύνη* compassion, charity.

l. 19. **much at my service**, merely a complimentary form of salutation.

l. 20. **made**, preached; the phrase to "make a sermon" being used for to "preach"; see p. 14, l. 5.

l. 22. **being willing...him**, wishing to give him something to do for me in my absence; some commission which he would feel a pleasure in executing.

l. 23. **marks**. A mark was a sum of money=13s. 4d.

l. 26. **fob**, watch-pocket, or small pocket in the breeches.

l. 27. **a tobacco stopper**, a small plug for pressing down tobacco in a pipe when part of the tobacco has been smoked and the rest requires to be tightened in order that the pipe may draw well.

l. 29. **turning**, *sc.* in a turning lathe.

l. 31. **who has good...smokes**, speaking as though the two things were almost synonymous.

ll. 32, 3. **Tom Touchy**, see p. 71, l. 15: **had taken...him**, had prosecuted him.

ll. 33, 4. **some hazel sticks**, for shaping into walking sticks, etc. Cp. p. 20, l. 9.

P. 100, ll. 3, 4. **But for my part...it**. The remark indicates the knight's doubt on the subject, a doubt which he does not like to admit, but which is evidently in his mind.

l. 8. **keeps open house**, is ready to receive any one as a guest.

ll. 9-11. **had dealt...neighbours**, had distributed chins, sides, of pork with great liberality, etc. The chine is properly the spine, backbone.

ll. 11, 2. **hog's-pudding**, large sausage-shaped bags of minced pork.

l. 15. **dead**, dreary, with no life in it.

l. 18. **to support them**, to make life tolerable.

ll. 18, 9. **to rejoice**, to gladden.

ll. 20, 1. **a double...malt**, in order to make it stronger: **small-beer**, thin, weak, beer in contrast with ale.

1. 21. **set it a running**, allow it to be freely drawn; a here=*on*; see Abb. § 24 (2): **twelve days**, i.e. from Christmas Day till the 6th of January, twelfth-day, when the Christmas festivities came to an end.

1. 23. a **mince-pie**, a pie made of mince-meat, i.e. of meat minced with raisins, candied-peel, spices, etc., and baked. The modern custom is rather to have a number of small round pies of this kind in a dish; here Sir Roger's mince-pie is a single large one from which his guests can help themselves as they like.

11. 25, 6. **smutting one another**, "This is probably an allusion to an old game in which two persons face each other at some little distance, each holding a plate before him. The person on whom the trick is to be played, being told to imitate the other, in doing so innocently rubs his finger first on the bottom of his plate, (previously blackened by being held over a candle), which being turned from him he cannot see, and then on his face. After some time he is shown a looking-glass, and finds that he has transferred soot from the plate to his face" (F. E. Wilcroft).

1. 30. **which carried...it**, which so clearly showed the goodness of his nature.

11. 32, 2. **the late act...England**. "The Occasional Conformity Bill, which, after being rejected in 1703 by the Whig House of Lords was passed in 1710 when the Tories were supreme under Harley and St. John. By the Test Act of 1673, no one could hold a civil, military, or magisterial office without receiving the sacrament according to the Anglican rite. Many dissenters had complied formally with the Act in order to be able to hold office. The Occasional Conformity Bill enacted that anyone, who, after taking the sacrament, attended a religious meeting of dissenters, should lose his appointment and pay a heavy fine" (F. E. Wilcroft).

11. 35, 6. **to eat...plum-porridge**, a thing he would never have done but for this Act; he thus showing his willingness to conform to Christmas ceremonies which by dissenters were regarded with abhorrence. Plum-porridge, or plum-broth, was a sort of soup made of meat stewed with raisins, spices, etc. Needham, *Hist. of the Rebellion* (1661), quoted by Brand, *Popular Antiquities*, laments the decay of Christmas festivities in lines beginning, "All *plums* the Prophet's sons defy, And *spice-broths* are too hot; Treason's in a *December-pye*, And death within the pot."

P. 101, 1. 1. **dispatched...matters**, discussed all the topics of interest connected with Sir Roger's house affairs.

1. 3. **his old antagonist**, sc. in political matters; see Essay 2, p. 7, l. 28.

11. 7, 8. **gathering...seriousness**, putting on a look of extreme seriousness.

1. 9. **in the pope's procession**. "The burning a Pope in effigy was a ceremony performed upon the anniversary of Queen Elizabeth's coronation (November 17th). When parties ran high betwixt the courtiers and opposition, in the latter part of Charles the Second's reign,

these anti-papal solemnities were conducted by the latter with great state and expense, and employed as engines to excite the popular resentment against the Duke of York and his religion" (note by Scott on the last line of the epilogue to Dryden's *Oedipus*, the note going on to give the details of the procession, in 1679, and being followed by a facsimile of an old picture of the ceremony). Sir Andrew's taking part in the procession, if he had done so, would have been a demonstration of his Whig principles.

l. 11. **wary**, cautious; unwilling to say anything that would show his feelings on political matters.

l. 14. **a stand**, a place, station, in one of the streets through which Eugène would have to pass in his triumphal progress through the city of London.

ll. 16, 7. **whose presence...nation**, Eugene having come to England to persuade the government to maintain the European alliance against France, thus showing his great respect for the power of England.

l. 20. **Baker's Chronicle**, Sir Richard Baker (1558-1645) was author among other works of a "Chronicle of the kings of England from the time of the Romans' government unto the death of King James," 1643,

ll. 21, 2. **which very much...prince**, not that Baker's Chronicle, which only goes down to the death of James I., had any mention of Prince Eugène, but that observations in it and the 'other authors,' made upon princes whose acts are therein eulogized, were applied by Sir Roger to this prince.

l. 26. **a dish**, a word then and for some time later used for what we should now call a 'cup': **Squire's**, "a coffee-house situated on the west side of the gate of Gray's Inn" (F.E.Wilcroft).

ll. 28, 9. **waited on him to**, attended him to, accompanied him to; the phrase showing his deference to the knight.

l. 31. **the high table**, the table reserved for persons of distinction.

l. 32. **a clean pipe**, a new clay pipe.

l. 33. **the Supplement**, a newspaper of the day.

l. 34. **boys**, attendants.

P. 102, l. 1. **could come at**, could get brought to them.

l. 2. **all his conveniencies**, all that he required to make himself comfortable.

## VISIT TO WESTMINSTER ABBEY. No. 329.

P. 102, l. 7. **my paper**, *sc.* No. 26, of the *Spectator*.

l. 15. **Baker's Chronicle**, see note, p. 101, l. 20.

l. 16. **Sir Andrew Freeport**, see Essay No. 2.

l. 19. **under his butler's hands**, being shaved by his butler.

l. 21. **Widow Truby's water**, a cordial or specific against infection.

ll. 28, 9. **against...gravel**, as a precaution against the stone or gravel, diseases of the kidneys and the bladder, the stone being only the gravel in an exaggerated form.

P. 103, ll. 1, 2. **I could have wished...sooner**, because in that case he would not have drunk it: **the virtues of it**, its medicinal properties.

l. 7. **the sickness**, the plague of 1709, which was especially virulent at Dantzic; **the**, the well-known sickness, the sickness *par excellence*; cp. "I am alone *the* villain of the earth" (A. C. iv. 6); "Where they feared *the* death, they have born life away" (H. v. iv. l. 181). Sometimes also prefixed to proper names to give emphasis,

ll. 7-10. **of a sudden...it**, this being a ruse to get rid of the servant's presence in order to go on with his story about the widow; **turning short**, breaking off and turning suddenly: **hackney coach**, these coaches, the precursors of the modern 'cab,' first came into use in the seventeenth century, public locomotion in London up to that time being chiefly by water; a 'hackney' is a horse let out for hire, but the origin of the word is uncertain.

l. 17. **jointure**, estate settled on a woman at her marriage to become hers at her husband's death.

ll. 17, 8. **the whole country...her**, everybody in his neighbourhood was anxious that he should marry her.

l. 19. **engaged**, not in the common colloquial sense of affianced, but bound by affection to the lady referred to in Essay No. 2.

ll. 32, 3. **a roll**, tobacco then being sold in that form.

l. 33. **their best Virginia**, the plantations in Virginia then, as now, producing the best tobacco.

P. 104, l. 3. **Sir Cloudsley Shovel**, 1650-1707, Commander-in-Chief of the Fleet; wrecked off the Scilly Isles when returning from Gibraltar. His body, being washed on shore, was buried by some fishermen, but was afterwards disinterred and laid in Westminster Abbey.

l. 6. **Dr. Busby**, for fifty-five years head-master of Westminster School; well known by the story of his having kept his cap on when Charles the Second visited the school, saying that it would never do for the boys to think any one superior to himself.

l. 10. **the little chapel**, "the chapel of St. Edmund, the King Edmund of East Anglia, who was murdered in 870 A.D., and after whom Bury St. Edmunds is named" (F. E. Wilcroft).

ll. 11, 2. **our historian**, the verger, or official, who conducted them over the Abbey and gave them the history of the various monuments, etc.

ll. 13, 4. **the lord...head**, by some supposed to refer to the monument to Sir Palmer Fairborne, in the south aisle of the nave, with an epitaph by Dryden in which he is described as drawing his "well-fleshed sword"

against the Moors. He never actually cut off the King of Morocco's head, but was for some years governor of Tangiers, and often fought against his majesty. In the *Dictionary of National Biography* it is stated that a Turk's head was included in his arms, and this may account for Addison's expression. Salmon, however, says that the "lord" was "Sir Bernard Brocas, who died in 1396. His head rests on a helmet, surrounded by a crest, a crowned Moor's head, whence, doubtless, originated the story of Sir Roger."

ll. 15, 6. **the statesman Cecil**, Cecil, Lord Burleigh, Secretary of state in the reign of Edward the Sixth, but more prominently known as Lord High Treasurer in that of Elizabeth.

ll. 18, 9. **that martyr...needle**, the figure shown as this martyr was that of Elizabeth, daughter of John, Lord Russell, second son of the second earl of that name: **our interpreter**, the 'historian' of l. 11, i.e. the verger.

l. 25. **coronation chairs**, the earlier of these two chairs is that in which all the kings of England, since Edward the First, have been crowned; the later one was made for the coronation of Mary, wife of William the Third.

ll. 26, 7. **the stone...them**, this is the sacred stone, originally at Scone in Scotland, on which the Scotch kings were crowned. Edward the First, after defeating Baliol in 1296, brought it to England, and it was subsequently inserted in an oak chair, which has ever since been used for the sovereign's coronation.

l. 28. **Jacob's Pillow**, the pillar erected by Jacob at Bethel, consisting of the stone which he had used for a pillow on the night in which God appeared to him in a dream and foretold the future greatness of his race; see *Genesis*, xxviii. 10-22.

l. 33. **pay his forfeit**, for having seated himself in the coronation chair.

l. 34. **ruffled**, put out, annoyed: **trepanned**, ensnared, beguiled, trapped; from O.F. *trappan*, a snare or trap for animals. The word should be spelt *trapan*, but has been confused with *trepan*, a small cylindrical saw used in removing a piece of a fractured skull, from Gk. *τροπανᾶν*, to bore.

P. 105, ll. 2, 3. **it would go hard...them**, he would manage by some means or other to get a piece of the wood of one of the chairs to make a tobacco stopper out of it; a **tobacco-stopper**, a piece of wood, ivory, metal, used for pressing down the tobacco in the bowl of a pipe.

ll. 4, 5. **Edward the Third's sword**. "Between the [coronation] chairs, leaning against the screen, are preserved the state shield and sword of Edward III., which were carried before him in France. This is 'the monumental sword that conquered France,' mentioned by Dryden: it is 7 feet long and weighs 18 lbs." (Hare, *Walks in London*, ii. 335): **pommel**, the nob at the end of the hilt, but here used for the hilt itself.

1. 12. **touched for the evil**, here again, **the evil**, like "the sickness," above, for the well-known evil, 'the king's evil,' as it was otherwise called, the scrofula. The belief in the sovereign's power to cure this disease dates backward from the days of Edward the Confessor and continued even to the time of Johnson, who in 1712 was taken to be 'touched' by Queen Anne. Cp. *Mach.* iv. 3. 140-156, where the process is described.

11. 13, 4. **there was...reign**, there was matter of much interest in the exciting occurrences of that reign.

11. 16, 7. **one of our...head**. This is Henry the Fifth. "Upon it" [his tomb], says Har, *Walks in London*, ii. 328, "lay his effigy stretched out, cut from the solid heart of an English oak, plated with silver-gilt, with a head of solid silver.... The whole of the silver was carried off by some robbers who had 'broken in the night-season into the Church of Westminster,' at the time of the Dissolution [of the monasteries]."

1. 18, **beaten silver**, hammered silver, solid silver fashioned by the hammer into the shape of a head.

1. 23. **of shining**, of showing to advantage the industry and intelligence with which he had studied his Chronicle.

11. 25. 6. **in him**, in his Chronicle.

1. 36. **Norfolk-buildings**, in Norfolk Street, Strand.

### SIR ROGER AT THE THEATRE, No. 335.

P. 106. 1. 9. **the new tragedy**, *The Distrest Mother*, a version of Racine's *Andromaque* by Ambrose Philips (1671-1749), to the reading of which the Spectator had been taken by Will Honeycomb as related in No. 290.

1. 10. **these twenty years**, for twenty years or more; used indefinitely.

1. 11. **The Committee**, by Sir Robert Howard, brother-in-law of Dryden, printed in 1665. The play was a caricature of the later Commonwealth period and, ridiculed the Puritans; whence Sir Roger calls it "a good Church of England comedy." "The plot turns," says Ward, *Eng. Dram. Lit.*, ii. 532, "on the rascalities perpetrated by Members of Committees of Sequestration in keeping or turning rightful owners out of their property for political disaffection."

1. 18. **at the end of the dictionary**, where in former days biographical notices of famous personages were given.

1. 20. **the Mohocks**, bands of riotous youths who infested the streets at night, plundering men and insulting women. They took their name from a tribe of North-American Indians.

1. 22. **lusty**, vigorous, stalwart.

1. 23. **Fleet Street**, so called from the river Fleet which in former days ran through London openly, but now is covered over and discharges itself through the sewers.

1. 24. **mended their pace**, increased their speed; **put on**, made an effort by walking faster.

1. 30-P. 107, l. 1. **I might have...design**, I might have given them as much trouble to catch me as a clever fox gives the huntsmen, if that was what they intended.

1. 6. **threw them out**, baffled them in their efforts to catch me; hounds when they lose the scent of the game are said to be "thrown out."

1. 7. **doubled the corner**, eluded them by getting round the corner as a fox or hare turns and twists to escape the hounds.

11. 9, 10. **Captain Sentry**, see p. 8, l. 17. etc.: **make one of us**, be of our party, accompany us.

1. 18. **battle of Steenkirk**, fought in 1692 between the French and William the Third, Prince of Orange.

1. 20. **good oaken plants**, stout oak cudgels.

1. 23. **convoyed**, escorted, conducted in safety, as a man-of-war convoys a fleet of merchant vessels in time of war.

1. 26. **the pit**, then a fashionable part of the theatre, and answering to the modern "stalls."

1. 34. **tragic audience**, audience that had come to witness a tragedy.

1. 35. **Pyrrhus**, or Neoptolemus, son of Achilles, one of the heroes in the Trojan war who was concealed in the wooden horse filled with armed men, introduced within the walls of Troy. At the taking of the city he killed Priam, and when the Trojan captives were distributed among the victors, Andromache, widow of Hector, was assigned to him.

1. 36. **a better strut**, a more dignified manner of walking; the word **strut** is generally used of a pompous gait.

P. 108, l. 5. **One while**, at one moment.

1. 6. **concerned**, troubled, anxious.

1. 7. **Hermione**, daughter of Menelaus and Helen. She had been promised in marriage to Orestes before the Trojan war; but Menelaus after his return home married her to Pyrrhus. On Orestes claiming her and being refused, he stirred up the Delphians against Pyrrhus who was slain in the tumult. Hermione afterwards married Orestes.

1. 13. **to have to do with**, here in the sense of wooing her; with an allusion to his own wooing, see Essay No. 2.

1. 14. **Pyrrhus his**, "His was sometimes used, by mistake, for 's', the sign of the possessive case, particularly after a proper name, and with especial frequency when the name ends in s"... (Abbott, § 217).

11. 15, 6. **do if you can**, hinting that Pyrrhus would find it very difficult to give up the widow.



II. 22, 3. **Should your people...understood?** intimating his idea that in so lofty a production as a tragedy the actors were not expected always to use language that could be understood by ordinary people, but to indulge in flights of bombast above the intelligence of their audience—a hit, as Salmon says, at the dramas of the Restoration period.

1. 25. **very luckily**, because otherwise he would have gone on talking in a way that would have provoked the amusement and ridicule of those in his neighbourhood: **begun**, though frequent in former days as a past tense, has now given way to 'began.'

1. 28. **Hector's ghost**, referring, says Salmon, to the mention of "my Hector's awful shade," at the end of the third act.

1. 29. **tell a praising**, took to praising, began and continued to praise; here **a** is a corruption of the preposition *on*.

1. 31. **Astyanax**, son of Hector and Andromache; his proper name was Scamandrius, but he was called Astyanax, or 'lord of the city,' by the Trojans on account of the services of his father.

1. 36. **going off**, leaving the stage.

P. 109, l. 2. **a notable young baggage**, a regular young hussy, on account of her treatment of Pyrrhus.

1. 8. **Orestes**, son of Agamemnon and Clytemnestra, and avenger of the murder of the former by the latter: **struck in with them**, joined in their conversation.

1. 9. **Pylades**, nephew of Agamemnon, whose murder he helped Orestes to avenge. The friendship between Orestes and Pylades has become proverbial from its warmth and sincerity.

II. 12, 3. **the old fellow in whiskers**, "one of the minor characters—Phoenix, counsellor to Pyrrhus" (Salmon).

II. 15, 6. **smoke the knight**, make fun of the knight.

II. 16-8. **whispered...act**, and so prevented him from continuing his conversation with the wags.

1. 25. **as if he saw something**, *sc.* a spectre.

1. 29. **justling**, we now say 'jostling.'

### WILL HONEYCOMB'S AMOURS. No. 359.

P. 110, l. 7. **minding**, paying heed to.

1. 9. **jogged**, nudged; called attention by a slight push.

1. 16. **brown study**, deep reverie, gloomy abstraction; originally from *brown* in the sense of gloomy now often of an idle or purposeless reverie.

II. 16, 7. **that once...right**, though confessing that Sir Andrew has hit the mark, Sir Roger will not let slip the opportunity for a

friendly thrust at his old antagonist by intimating that Sir Andrew's sagacity is very rarely so fortunate.

l. 23. **she'll have**, will take as a husband.

ll. 26, 7. **as his particular province**, as a matter peculiarly his own from the wide experience he has had in it.

l. 27. **jaunty**, airy and affected.

ll. 29, 30. **to pin...woman**, to feel that your happiness depends entirely upon such a weak creature as a woman.

P. 111, l. 3. **amours**, love affairs.

l. 13. **conclusion**, *i.e.*, a satisfactory conclusion, by the lady accepting him.

l. 14. **boarded with a surgeon**, which circumstance looked as if I had not been a very healthy person: **the old put**, the wretched old creature; a Devonshire provincialism for "a stinking fellow."

l. 18. **so briskly**, with so much energy.

l. 19. **waited upon her**, paid her a visit; but expressing the deference shown by a man to a woman.

l. 20. **jointure**, estate settled on a woman in marriage in case of her husband's death, and here the estate she had acquired by her first husband's death.

l. 22. **Lion's (Lyon's) inn**, one of the old Inns of Court. It stood between Wych Street and Holywell Street (destroyed in the making of Aldwych), but was pulled down in 1863. Among the lawyers by whom it was once tenanted was Sir Edward Coke, whose lectures there attracted to him a crowd of clients.

l. 24. **this overture**, this proposition of hers that I should estate her with a further jointure.

l. 29. **soft things**, tender things, compliments and assurances of admiration.

ll. 29, 30. **made...heart**, felt sure of winning her love.

ll. 33, 4. **to break...him**, to disclose to him with all modesty what my hope were; his fortune not being equal to the lady's, he was obliged to approach the father on the subject cautiously and with modesty.

P. 112, l. 2. **to miss her**, to fail to win her.

ll. 3. **Her maid...me**, *sc.* which in a measure accounts for her rejecting me.

l. 5. **spindle...legs**, pair of legs resembling in their extreme thinness the stick upon which a thread is spun; *spindle-shanks* is a not uncommon term of contempt for a man of unusually thin legs.

l. 8. **dog**, used with a complacent recollection of his youthful wildness.

ll. 11, 2. **get the old...side**, win the parents' approval.

l. 16. **with flying colours**, in the most triumphant manner.

l. 19. **carried off**, killed; with a play upon the words in reference to his endeavour to "bear her away" in marriage.

l. 20. **transitions**, *sc.* from one point of a subject to another, and from one person to another.

ll. 22, 3. **had considered last Saturday**, had discussed in my paper of last Saturday, *i.e.* No. 337 of the *Spectator*. The "book" was the tenth book of *Paradise Lost*, and the lines quoted are 888-908.

l. 32. **as angels**, as in the case of angels who are (in *Paradise Lost*) all masculine.

l. 37. **straight conjunction**, close union.

P. 113, ll. 1. 2. **but such...mistake**, the construction is "but such as misfortune or mistake brings him."

l. 5. **withheld**, *i.e.* shall see her withheld.

l. 7. **link'd**, agreeing with this choice (*i.e.* her whom he had chosen) in the line above: **wedlock**, though it should be hyphenated with **bound**, belongs equally to **link'd**,

l. 8. **fell**, hateful: **his hate**, or **shame**, whom (*sc.* the woman who should have been his wife) he either hates or regards with shame.

l. 10. **confound**, throw into utter confusion, destroy.

#### VISIT TO SPRING GARDENS. No. 383.

P. 113, l. 20. **irregular bounces**, random knocks, not the deliberate rat-tat-tat that would be given by a town-bred visitor.

l. 26. **on the water**, by the Thames, then much more of a thoroughfare to various localities than since the introduction of cabs and omnibuses: **Spring-Garden**, here what was originally known as the New Spring Gardens at Fox Hall, to distinguish them from the old Spring (Fountain) Garden of Whitehall Palace. The name Fox Hall (afterwards altered to *Vauxhall*, "dates from the marriage of Isabella de Fortibus, Countess of Albemarle...with Foukes de Breant, after which the place was called Foukes-Hall" (Hare, *Walks in London*, ii. 454).

l. 27. **good**, fine.

l. 28. **from the...stair-case**, calling out to me from the foot of the stairs.

l. 29. **speculating**, *i.e.* upon subjects for his paper, or perhaps on philosophical questions generally.

l. 31. **got...friend**, surrounding him.

P. 114, l. 1. **who is...gossip**, who is well known for her love of gossiping.

l. 4. **mind his book**, pay attention to his lessons.

l. 5. **the Temple-stairs**, the stairs at the bottom of the Temple Gardens where the watermen moored their boats for hire.

ll. 12, 3. **bate him...oar**, he rowed a little more slowly, owing to his loss of a limb; **bate**, abate, and so remit, excuse.

l. 25. **kept a barge**, as many persons of rank living near the river did in those days.

ll. 17, 8. **trimmed...coachman**, steadied the boat by taking the coachman on board to serve as a make-weight.

l. 19. **ballast**, literally "means 'a load behind,' or 'a load in the rear'; and we may conclude that it as so called because the ballast was stowed more in the after part of 'he ship than in front, so as to tilt up the bows; a very sensible plan "...(*Skeat, Ety. Dict.*).

l. 22. **La Hogue**, or Hague, in the north-west coast of France, where on May 19th, 1692, the English and Dutch fleets defeated the French fleet, burning thirteen of their vessels and destroying eight more.

ll. 28, 9. **London bridge**, the bridge here meant was that restored in 1300 after the fire in 1212, and again partially destroyed by fire in 1471, 1632, and 1725. The present bridge was begun in 1824 and opened in 1831.

ll. 29, 30. **the seven wonders**, viz. (1) The pyramids of Egypt. (2) The tomb of Mausolus, King of Caria. (3) The temple of Diana at Ephesus. (4) The walls and hanging gardens of Babylon. (5) The Colossus at Rhodes. (6) The ivory and gold statue of Jupiter Olympus, executed by Phidias. (7) The watch-tower built by Ptolemy Philadelphus, King of Egypt.

ll. 34, 5. **how thick...churches**, at what close intervals the churches were planted in the city; here the city means the city proper, extending eastward from Temple Bar, as contrasted with the west-end of London.

P. 115, l. 2. **The fifty new churches**, for building which an Act of Parliament was passed in 1710.

ll. 2, 3. **mend the prospect**, improve the view.

l. 3. **church-work is slow**, everything connected with the building or improvement of churches is very tedious, as compared with the energy displayed in the matter of secular buildings.

ll. 9-11. **it is thought...shire**, it is supposed on more than one occasion to have nearly succeeded in getting him returned as Member of Parliament for the county.

l. 13. **broke from him**, i.e. it is so much his habit that he almost involuntarily saluted the occupants of the boats that passed by us though he had never seen them before.

l. 15. **gave the good-night**, bade good-night, as we should now say.

l. 17. **what queer old put**, what strange looking and strangely dressed old creature from the country; much the same as the "bloke" of modern slang.

l. 20. **assuming...magistracy**, putting on the stern look he would wear on the bench.

ll. 29, 30. **Mahometan paradise**, a paradise of sensual pleasure such as that promised in the Qur'an to virtuous Musalmāns.

ll. 34, 5. **your nightingale**, the nightingale that everyone knows so well; for your, in this colloquial sense, see Abb. §221. From the story of Philomela who was changed into a nightingale, and in that shape poured forth her tale of unfortunate love, the nightingale has always been considered the bird of love; cp. Milton's *Sonnet*, "O nightingale... Thou with fresh hope the lover's heart dost fill."

P. 116, l. 1. **the widow**, see p. 6, l. 7.

l. 3. **a mask**, a woman wearing a mask.

l. 5. **mead**, a drink made from honey.

ll. 6, 7. **to be interrupted**, we should now say "at being interrupted."

ll. 7, 8. **go about her business** be off and leave him alone.

l. 9. **Burton ale**. "This seems to have just been coming into vogue in Addison's time. In earlier times the monks of Burton were noted for their beer, which, however, was much stronger than the liquor of the same name to-day" (F. E. Wilcroft). Two of the largest breweries in England, those of Messrs. Bass and Messrs. Allsopp, are at Burton-on-Trent, and the water of the river is said to have something to do with the excellence of the beer.

l. 10. **hung beef**, spiced, or salted, beef, which is hung up and keeps good for a long time.

ll. 14, 5. **I ratified...look**, I enforced his orders by looking at the waiter in a determined and authoritative manner.

#### DEATH OF SIR ROGER. No. 517.

P. 116, l. 20. **sensibly**, keenly, feelingly.

ll. 27, 8. **very warmly...penning**, eagerly advocating the adoption of an address which he had himself composed.

P. 117, l. 14. **country**, neighbourhood.

l. 22. **had lost...stomach**, had no appetite for roast beef; a dish of which he was always so fond.

ll. 25, 6. **kept a good heart**, retained his usual good spirits.

l. 27. **upon a kind message**, on his receiving a kind message.

l. 29. **a lightning before death**, a last bright flicker of the flame of life before it went out for ever. From *Romeo and Juliet*. v. 3. 90.

l. 32. **my good old lady**, the good old mistress whom I served.

P. 118, l. 1. **tenement**, a holding, a dwelling inhabited by a tenant.

l. 3. **frieze-coat**, a coat made of a coarse woollen cloth; literally, cloth of Friesland.

- l. 4. **riding-hood**, such as were worn by women riding to market.
- l. 12. **peremptorily**, confidently, as being a matter of certainty.
- l. 16. **made...end**, died peacefully and with resignation to God's will; cp. *H. V.* ii. 3. 11, "A' made a finer end and went away an it had been any christom child," said of the dying Falstaff.
- l. 20. **the quorum**, see note, p. 6, l. 28.
- l. 29. **quit rents**, rents reserved in grants of land by payment of which the tenant is quit from other service, but in this case charges upon the estate; **quit** is here used in its adjectival sense, and no hyphen is necessary.
- l. 31. **makes much of**, treats with great kindness.
- l. 35. **joyed himself**, been cheerful.
- P. 119, ll. 12, 3. **Act of Uniformity**. There were three Acts of Uniformity, passed respectively in 1549, 1558, 1662, all prescribing the use in the Church of England of the Book of Common Prayer, founded upon the old Catholic Missal and Breviary, and revised from time to time.

274657

0111:9

p53

## INDEX.

### A

Act. of Occasional Conformity, 100. 31.  
Act, of Uniformity, 118. 12.  
Afflux, 67. 31.  
Aggravation, 73. 22.  
Agog, 82. 12.  
Ale, Burton, 116. 10.  
Alms, 99. 11.  
Amours, 44. 3.  
Angle-rod, 19. 29.  
Approbations, 70. 18.  
Assizes, 34, 2.

### B

Backgammon, 13. 16.  
Baggage, a, 109. 2.  
Baker's Chronicle, 101. 20.  
Basket-hilt, 23. 21.  
Bass, 46. 29.  
Bass-viol, 23. 20.  
Bastile, the, 45, 17.  
Bayle, 66. 2.  
Beagles, 46. 19.  
Beef, hung, 116. 11.  
Bitted, 33, 35.  
Bowling-green, 86. 26.  
Boxing, 44. 33.  
Boyle, 68. 30.  
Brideman, 96. 7.  
Britain, Little, 5. 14.  
Brown's study, 110. 16.

### C

Canker, a, 38. 21.  
Cardinal, 16. 34.

Cassandra, 88. 30.  
Cast clothes, 16. 17.  
Chamberlain, 94. 28.  
Chancel, 31. 12.  
Chaplain, 12. 29.  
Chiding, 48. 29.  
Churn, 52. 25.  
Circuit, 61. 7.  
Clove-bag, 94. 18.  
Cock and bull, 94. 4.  
Cock-match, 85. 28.  
Cocoa-tree, the, 3. 23.  
Coke, 7. 4.  
Common, a, 7. 34.  
Commonwealth's men, 94. 11.  
Coronation chairs, 104, 25.  
Country-dance, 5. 25.  
Covey, 46. 1.  
Cowley, 40. 10.

### D

Dampier, 66. 11.  
Dawson, Bully, 6. 11.  
Decrepit, 54. 5.  
Dew-lap'd, 47. 1.  
Diodorus, 84. 32.  
Discarded, 92. 3.  
Doubles, 48. 7.  
Doublet, 6. 17.

### E

Edifying, 14. 26.  
Elder-bush, 27. 2.  
Equipage, 94. 16.  
Etherege, Sir G., 6. 10.  
Eugène, Prince, 98. 26.



Evil, the, 105. 13.  
 Exchange, the, 3. 25.  
 Exercises, the public, 2. 25.  
 Exercised, 28. 15.

## F

Family, 15. 29.  
 Fine, a, 16. 36.  
 Flitch, 31. 22.  
 Flu'd, 46. 35.  
 Foils, 31. 8.  
 Freeport, Sir A., 7. 28.  
 Frieze-coat, 118, 3.

## G

Game-Act, 6. 30.  
 Gibellines, 82. 20.  
 Gipsies, 87. 27.  
 Goblins, 27. 21.  
 Go-cart, 23. 29.  
 Gray's Inn, 98. 23.  
 Grecian, the, 3. 23.

## H

Half-pike, 95. 14.  
 Hasped, 96. 34.  
 Hassock, 30. 12.  
 Hasty-pudding, 23. 33.  
 Haymarket, the, 3. 25.  
 Hog's-puddings, 100. 11.  
 Humour (of the eye), 68. 35.  
 Hussy, 57. 21.

## I

Ichneumon, 84. 34.  
 Incumbent, 31. 26.  
 Innocent, 58. 10.

## J

Jack, a, 19. 6.  
 Jacob's Pillow, 104. 28.  
 James's, Saint, 3. 20.  
 Jesuits, 92. 27.  
 Jetting, 22. 23.  
 Jointure, 103. 17.  
 Jonathan's, 3. 27.  
 Jovial, 6. 15.  
 Justice of the peace 2. 8.

## L

Laertes, 39. 11.  
 La Hogue, 114. 22.  
 Land-tax, 80. 11.  
 League, the, 82. 21.  
 Libertine, 38. 32.  
 Littleton, 7. 14.  
 Livery, 18. 5.  
 Locke, 27. 16.  
 Longinus, 7. 3.  
 Lucretius, 28. 32.  
 Lurch, 60. 31.

## M

Mansion, 41. 8.  
 Manumission, 17. 18.  
 Martial, M. Valerius, 37. 12.  
 May-fly, 19. 28.  
 Mince-pie, 100. 23.  
 Modish, 59. 2.  
 Mohocks, 106. 20.  
 Monmouth, Duke of, 10. 2.  
 More, Henry, 67. 35.  
 Mrs. 94. 30.  
 Murrain, 34. 11.

## N

Never (elliptical), 64. 35.  
 Nightmare, 53. 19.  
 Nonage, 2. 20.  
 Novel (sb.), 75. 19.

## O

Officious, 19. 30.  
 Opened (of dogs), 48. 12.  
 Original (sb.), 69. 18.  
 Otway, 51. 31.

## P

Pad, 47. 7.  
 Palmed, 52. 23.  
 Palmistry, 89. 28.  
 Palsy, 51. 36.  
 Paschal, 49. 17.  
 Patron, 17. 27.  
 Perriwig, 7. 24.  
 Peruse, 1. 7.  
 Petty jury, 71. 14.

Plum-porridge, 100. 36.  
 Plutarch, 80. 34.  
 Pommel, 23. 8.  
 Pope's procession, the, 101. 9.  
 Presaged, 2. 9.  
 Prick-ear'd, 80. 2.

## Q

Quail-pipe, 21. 2.  
 Quarter-session, 6. 29.  
 Quit-rents, 118. 29.  
 Quorum, 6. 28.

## R

Rattle, a, 2. 15.  
 Rheum, 51. 35.  
 Rochester, Lord, 6. 10.  
 Romp, a, 24. 9.  
 Round, 72. 2.  
 Roundheads, 79. 24.

## S

Scanderbeg, 99. 2.  
 Sentry, Captain, 8. 17.  
 Setting dog, a, 20. 2.  
 Sheriff, 33. 27.  
 Shire, Knight of a, 25. 10.  
 Shuttlecocks, 20. 17.  
 Slashes, 24. 12.  
 Smelling to, 93. 34.  
 Smoky, 97. 14.  
 Smuting, 100. 25.  
 Soho Square, 6. 6.  
 Sphinx, the, 36. 20.  
 Spindle, 112. 5.  
 Spring-Garden, 113. 26.  
 Steenkirk, battle of, 107. 18.

Stepmother, 65. 23.  
 Stomach, 38. 18.  
 Sydenham, Dr., 44. 13.

## T

Tabby, 53. 3.  
 Tansy, 36. 33.  
 Target, 23. 7.  
 Tartars, 85. 11.  
 Tenement, 17. 1.  
 Temple, Inner, the, 6. 33.  
 Tilt-yard, the, 23. 2.  
 Tithe-stealers, 31. 36.  
 Tories, 83. 18.  
 Tossing (witches), 50. 20.  
 Touched (for the evil), 105. 12.  
 Trekschuyt, 89. 36.  
 Trepanned, 104. 34.  
 Tucker, 36. 28.  
 Tulip, 19. 33.

## V

Valet-de-chambre, 11. 27.  
 Vermin, 46. 6.

## W

Weeds, 52. 5.  
 Whigs, 83. 17.  
 Whitehall, 23. 2.  
 White-pot, 23. 34.  
 White witch, 92. 23.  
 Will's (coffee-house), 3. 15.  
 Wonders, the seven, 114. 30.  
 Worcester, battle of, 25. 34.

## Y

Yeoman, of the guard, 22. 34

274657

0111:9

P53

# MACMILLAN'S

## ANNOTATED CLASSICS

*The publishing of these classics is an endeavour to bring out at reasonable prices scholarly edition of texts in common use in Indian universities by students of English literature. All the titles are edited by experienced academics providing adequate editorial matter in the form of a biographical sketch of the author, literary criticism, introduction, annotations, notes, questions, topics for discussion and an upto date bibliography.*

*A List of titles available in this series is included inside the book*

**Rs. 65.00**

**ISBN 0333 917480**



**MACMILLAN**

Macmillan India Limited  
[www.macmillanindia.com](http://www.macmillanindia.com)